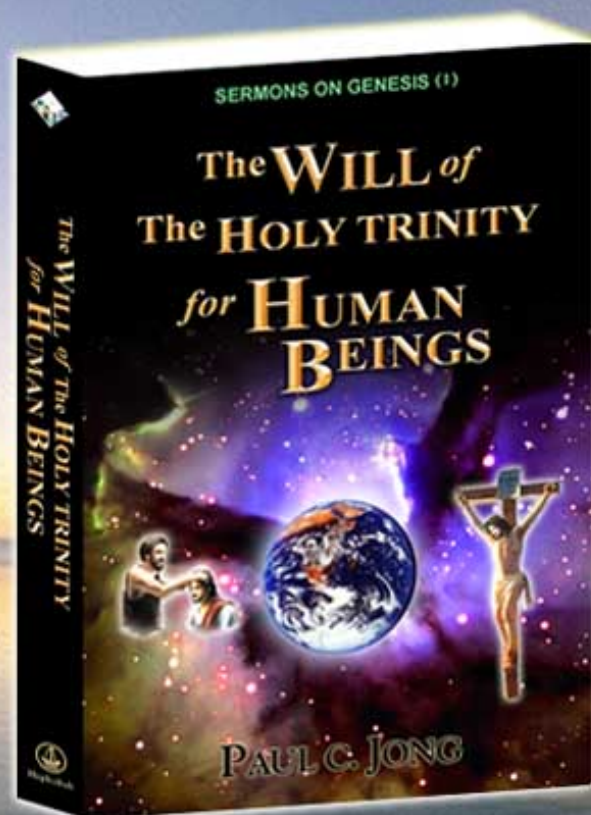




The New Life Mission

*SERMONS ON GENESIS (I)*

# The WILL of The HOLY TRINITY for HUMAN BEINGS



Begin Reading



Table of Contents



User Guide



Hapizibab

# Worldwide websites of



## The New Life Mission

The Official Website of The New Life Mission

[www.nlmission.com](http://www.nlmission.com) or  
[www.bjnewlife.org](http://www.bjnewlife.org)

Please find your vernacular websites below.

You can download Christian e-books and request Christian books for free.

Feel free to visit our websites below right now!

- A** [www.nlmafghanistan.com](http://www.nlmafghanistan.com)  
[www.nlmfrikaans.com](http://www.nlmfrikaans.com)  
[www.nlmalbania.com](http://www.nlmalbania.com)  
[www.nlmamharic.com](http://www.nlmamharic.com)  
[www.nlmangola.com](http://www.nlmangola.com)  
[www.nlmarabemirates.com](http://www.nlmarabemirates.com)  
[www.nlmarabic.com](http://www.nlmarabic.com)  
[www.nlmargentina.com](http://www.nlmargentina.com)  
[www.nlmarmenia.com](http://www.nlmarmenia.com)  
[www.nlmaruba.com](http://www.nlmaruba.com)  
[www.nlmaustralia.com](http://www.nlmaustralia.com)  
[www.nlmmaustria.com](http://www.nlmmaustria.com)
- B** [www.nlmbahamas.com](http://www.nlmbahamas.com)  
[www.nlmbahrain.com](http://www.nlmbahrain.com)  
[www.nlmbangladesh.com](http://www.nlmbangladesh.com)  
[www.nlmbelarus.com](http://www.nlmbelarus.com)  
[www.nlmbelgium.com](http://www.nlmbelgium.com)  
[www.nlmbengali.com](http://www.nlmbengali.com)  
[www.nlmbenin.com](http://www.nlmbenin.com)  
[www.nlmbhutan.com](http://www.nlmbhutan.com)  
[www.nlmbolivia.com](http://www.nlmbolivia.com)

- [www.nlmbotswana.com](http://www.nlmbotswana.com)  
[www.nlmbrasil.com](http://www.nlmbrasil.com)  
[www.nlmbriton.com](http://www.nlmbriton.com)  
[www.nlmbrunei.com](http://www.nlmbrunei.com)  
[www.nlmbulgalia.com](http://www.nlmbulgalia.com)  
[www.nlmburkinafaso.com](http://www.nlmburkinafaso.com)  
[www.nlmburundi.com](http://www.nlmburundi.com)
- C** [www.nlmcameroon.com](http://www.nlmcameroon.com)  
[www.nlmcanada.com](http://www.nlmcanada.com)  
[www.nlmcebuano.com](http://www.nlmcebuano.com)  
[www.nlmchichewa.com](http://www.nlmchichewa.com)  
[www.nlmchile.com](http://www.nlmchile.com)  
[www.nlmchin.com](http://www.nlmchin.com)  
[www.nlmchina.com](http://www.nlmchina.com)  
[www.nlmcolombia.com](http://www.nlmcolombia.com)  
[www.nlmcongo.com](http://www.nlmcongo.com)  
[www.nlmcostarica.com](http://www.nlmcostarica.com)  
[www.nlmcotedivoire.com](http://www.nlmcotedivoire.com)  
[www.nlmcroatia.com](http://www.nlmcroatia.com)  
[www.nlmczech.com](http://www.nlmczech.com)
- D** [www.nlmdenmark.com](http://www.nlmdenmark.com)

- [www.nlmdioula.com](http://www.nlmdioula.com)  
[www.nlmdominica.com](http://www.nlmdominica.com)  
[www.nlmdutch.com](http://www.nlmdutch.com)
- E** [www.nlmecuador.com](http://www.nlmecuador.com)  
[www.nlmegypt.com](http://www.nlmegypt.com)  
[www.nlmelsalvador.com](http://www.nlmelsalvador.com)  
[www.nlmequatorialguinea.com](http://www.nlmequatorialguinea.com)  
[www.nlmethiopia.com](http://www.nlmethiopia.com)
- F** [www.nlmfinland.com](http://www.nlmfinland.com)  
[www.nlmfrance.com](http://www.nlmfrance.com)  
[www.nlmfrench.com](http://www.nlmfrench.com)
- G** [www.nlmgabon.com](http://www.nlmgabon.com)  
[www.nlmgeorgian.com](http://www.nlmgeorgian.com)  
[www.nlmgerman.com](http://www.nlmgerman.com)  
[www.nlmgermany.com](http://www.nlmgermany.com)  
[www.nlmghana.com](http://www.nlmghana.com)  
[www.nlmgreek.com](http://www.nlmgreek.com)  
[www.nlmgrenada.com](http://www.nlmgrenada.com)  
[www.nlmguatemala.com](http://www.nlmguatemala.com)

# Worldwide websites of The New Life Mission

**H** [www.nlmgujarati.com](http://www.nlmgujarati.com)  
[www.nlmhaiti.com](http://www.nlmhaiti.com)  
[www.nlmhindi.com](http://www.nlmhindi.com)  
[www.nlmholland.com](http://www.nlmholland.com)  
[www.nlmhonduras.com](http://www.nlmhonduras.com)  
[www.nlmhungary.com](http://www.nlmhungary.com)  
**I** [www.nlm-india.com](http://www.nlm-india.com)  
[www.nlmindonesia.com](http://www.nlmindonesia.com)  
[www.nlmiran.com](http://www.nlmiran.com)  
[www.nlmiraq.com](http://www.nlmiraq.com)  
[www.nlmisrael.com](http://www.nlmisrael.com)  
[www.nlmitaly.com](http://www.nlmitaly.com)  
**J** [www.nlmjamaica.com](http://www.nlmjamaica.com)  
[www.nlmjapan.com](http://www.nlmjapan.com)  
[www.nlmjapanese.com](http://www.nlmjapanese.com)  
**K** [www.nlmkannada.com](http://www.nlmkannada.com)  
[www.nlmkazakhstan.com](http://www.nlmkazakhstan.com)  
[www.nlmkenya.com](http://www.nlmkenya.com)  
[www.nlmkhmer.com](http://www.nlmkhmer.com)  
[www.nlmkirghiz.com](http://www.nlmkirghiz.com)  
[www.nlmkirundi.com](http://www.nlmkirundi.com)  
[www.nlmkorea.com](http://www.nlmkorea.com)  
**L** [www.nlmlatvia.com](http://www.nlmlatvia.com)  
[www.nlmluganda.com](http://www.nlmluganda.com)  
[www.nlmluo.com](http://www.nlmluo.com)  
**M** [www.nlmmadi.com](http://www.nlmmadi.com)  
[www.nlmmalagasy.com](http://www.nlmmalagasy.com)  
[www.nlmmalayalam.com](http://www.nlmmalayalam.com)  
[www.nlmmalaysia.com](http://www.nlmmalaysia.com)  
[www.nlmmarathi.com](http://www.nlmmarathi.com)

[www.nlmmauritius.com](http://www.nlmmauritius.com)  
[www.nlmmexico.com](http://www.nlmmexico.com)  
[www.nlmmindat.com](http://www.nlmmindat.com)  
[www.nlmmizo.com](http://www.nlmmizo.com)  
[www.nlmmoldova.com](http://www.nlmmoldova.com)  
[www.nlmmongolia.com](http://www.nlmmongolia.com)  
[www.nlmmyanmar.com](http://www.nlmmyanmar.com)  
**N** [www.nlmnepal.com](http://www.nlmnepal.com)  
[www.nlmnewzealand.com](http://www.nlmnewzealand.com)  
[www.nlmnigeria.com](http://www.nlmnigeria.com)  
[www.nlmnorthkorea.com](http://www.nlmnorthkorea.com)  
[www.nlmnorway.com](http://www.nlmnorway.com)  
**P** [www.nlmpakistan.com](http://www.nlmpakistan.com)  
[www.nlmpanama.com](http://www.nlmpanama.com)  
[www.nlmperu.com](http://www.nlmperu.com)  
[www.nlmphilippines.com](http://www.nlmphilippines.com)  
[www.nlmpoland.com](http://www.nlmpoland.com)  
[www.nlmportugal.com](http://www.nlmportugal.com)  
[www.nlmportuguese.com](http://www.nlmportuguese.com)  
[www.nlmprcongo.com](http://www.nlmprcongo.com)  
**Q** [www.nlmqatar.com](http://www.nlmqatar.com)  
**R** [www.nlmromania.com](http://www.nlmromania.com)  
[www.nlmrussia.com](http://www.nlmrussia.com)  
**S** [www.nlmSaudiArabia.com](http://www.nlmSaudiArabia.com)  
[www.nlmserbian.com](http://www.nlmserbian.com)  
[www.nlmshona.com](http://www.nlmshona.com)  
[www.nlmSingapore.com](http://www.nlmSingapore.com)  
[www.nlmSlovakia.com](http://www.nlmSlovakia.com)  
[www.nlmSlovene.com](http://www.nlmSlovene.com)  
[www.nlmSolomon.com](http://www.nlmSolomon.com)

[www.nlmSouthAfrica.com](http://www.nlmSouthAfrica.com)  
[www.nlmSpain.com](http://www.nlmSpain.com)  
[www.nlmSpanish.com](http://www.nlmSpanish.com)  
[www.nlmSrilanka.com](http://www.nlmSrilanka.com)  
[www.nlmSuriname.com](http://www.nlmSuriname.com)  
[www.nlmSwahili.com](http://www.nlmSwahili.com)  
[www.nlmSwaziland.com](http://www.nlmSwaziland.com)  
[www.nlmSweden.com](http://www.nlmSweden.com)  
[www.nlmSwiss.com](http://www.nlmSwiss.com)  
**T** [www.nlmTagalog.com](http://www.nlmTagalog.com)  
[www.nlmTaiwan.com](http://www.nlmTaiwan.com)  
[www.nlmTamil.com](http://www.nlmTamil.com)  
[www.nlmTanzania.com](http://www.nlmTanzania.com)  
[www.nlmTelugu.com](http://www.nlmTelugu.com)  
[www.nlmThailand.com](http://www.nlmThailand.com)  
[www.nlmTogo.com](http://www.nlmTogo.com)  
[www.nlmTonga.com](http://www.nlmTonga.com)  
[www.nlmTurkey.com](http://www.nlmTurkey.com)  
**U** [www.nlmUganda.com](http://www.nlmUganda.com)  
[www.nlmUkraine.com](http://www.nlmUkraine.com)  
[www.nlmUrdu.com](http://www.nlmUrdu.com)  
[www.nlmUSA.com](http://www.nlmUSA.com)  
**V** [www.nlmVenezuela.com](http://www.nlmVenezuela.com)  
[www.nlmVietnam.com](http://www.nlmVietnam.com)  
**Z** [www.nlmZambia.com](http://www.nlmZambia.com)  
[www.nlmZimbabwe.com](http://www.nlmZimbabwe.com)  
[www.nlmZou.com](http://www.nlmZou.com)

## *God's Purpose Revealed in Genesis*

Anyone who wants to build a house first designs a blueprint appropriate to its particular purpose, and then builds the house according to this blueprint. Likewise, our Lord also needed a blueprint to save mankind from sin and make human beings God's people. While all the Word of the Bible shows us God's blueprint, the Book of Genesis in particular reveals His plan in the most detail. Of God's blueprint of salvation, what manifests His purpose clearest is the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. By believing in God's Word, we can realize His good will toward us.

What was the purpose for which God created us? The Lord created us so that we would praise the righteousness of God and His will, and it was also to give us the spiritual blessings of Heaven. All of this was the intention of God that He sought to reveal to us.

God has manifested His will through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and by believing in this purpose that God revealed through His Church, we were able to accept it and rejoice. All the blessings that God has given to us will always be with us. Hallelujah!



SERMONS ON GENESIS (I)

The **WILL** of  
The **HOLY TRINITY**  
*for* **HUMAN**  
**BEINGS**

PAUL C. JONG

**Hephzibah Publishing House**  
A Ministry of THE NEW LIFE MISSION  
SEOUL, KOREA

*Sermons on Genesis (I)*  
*The Will of the Holy Trinity for Human Beings*

---

Copyright © 2005 by The New Life Mission

All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without the written permission of the copyright owner.

Scripture quotations are from *the New King James Version*.

ISBN 89-8314-673-7



Contents



---

---

# CONTENTS

---

---

Preface ----- 8

## **CHAPTER 1**

1. The Bible Is the Word of Salvation,  
Not a Book of Science  
(Genesis 1:1-2) ----- 15

2. Have You Become Light in the Gospel  
of Truth? (Genesis 1:2-3) ----- 39

3. From the Power of Darkness  
into the Kingdom of the Son  
(Genesis 1:2-5) ----- 61

4. First Day: In the Beginning God  
Created the Heavens and the Earth  
(Genesis 1:1-5 ) ----- 114

5. The Water above the Firmament and  
the Water below the Firmament  
(Genesis 1:6-8) ----- 148

6. God Divided the Waters  
on the Second Day (Genesis 1:6-8) ----- 177

7. To Fulfill the Will of God  
(Genesis 1:9-13) ----- 224



8. To Enter Inside God's Work (Genesis 1:9-13) -----	253
9. We Can Be Saved from All Our Sin Only When We Know All Our Wickedness (Genesis 1:9-13) -----	288
10. What God's Servants Who Believe in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit Must Do (Genesis 1:14-19) -----	301
11. God Makes Us into Worthy Vessels (Genesis 1:16-19) -----	318
12. The Righteous Shall Live by Faith Alone (Genesis 1:20-23) -----	334

13. Set Your Hearts before God (Genesis 1:20-23) -----	359
14. The Lives of the People of Faith Who Believe in God's Word with Their Hearts (Genesis 1:20-23) -----	376
15. The Reason Why God Made Us in the Likeness of His Image (Genesis 1:24-31) -----	392
16. We Were Made in the Image of God (Genesis 1:24-31) -----	412



## Preface

### - On the Will of the Holy Trinity for Human Beings -



Ephesians 1:9-10 says, “*Having made known to us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He purposed in Himself, that in the dispensation of the fullness of the times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth—in Him.*” Through the Book of Genesis, God wants us to realize His good intentions toward us. Where is God’s will for us revealed? It is revealed in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that God accomplished through Jesus Christ. We must come into this good intention of God by faith, manifested in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. To do so,





when we consider God's Word, we need to cast aside our existing carnal thoughts we have had, and believe in God's Word exactly as it is. All of us must throw away our mistaken knowledge accumulated until now, and open our spiritual eyes by placing our faith in the righteousness of God.

We can believe in God properly only when we correctly understand His good intentions revealed in His Word. It was to manifest and show us these intentions that God wrote the Word of the creation of the heavens and the earth. We must grasp what intentions the Triune God had toward mankind when He created the universe. God sought to make every human being in the likeness of His image.

If God had first made man before all the other creatures when He created the universe and everything in it, then man would clearly have been an obstacle to God's good intentions.

People reject anything that can't be understood at the level of their thoughts. Therefore, unless one casts aside his own thoughts, he cannot help but turn into someone who stands against God's will, because it is impossible for him to understand God's intentions with his own carnal thought. In fact, aren't countless people now standing against God's true love, ignorant of His righteousness?

God's Word of Truth is like the blueprint that lays out His righteousness. In this universe that had been filled with darkness, God has become the light of Truth. On the first day of creation, God commanded to let there be light from darkness, thus making His good intentions known to us from the very beginning, which were to give the gospel of the true remission of sin to our spiritually dark hearts. The intention of the Triune God was to defeat the darkness with the light of Truth, so that we may come into His



grace of salvation, when we had been bound to die trapped in Satan's tricks.

On the second day of the creation of the heavens and the earth, God divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. God's intention revealed on the second day was that He would deliver all of us from Satan's words by dividing His Word from the words of the Devil. Therefore, we should lead our lives of faith based on God's Word, and, to do so, we must first be saved by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit manifested in the Word of God. On the third day, God commanded all the waters under the heavens to gather into one place and the dry land to be exposed. When God commanded this, His intention was to expose our sinfulness and make us follow only His righteousness.

On the fourth day of the creation of the heavens and the earth, God made the sun, the

moon, and the stars. God's intention manifested on the fourth day was to show that it is through His servants who light up the darkness by believing in His righteousness that God spreads the light of salvation to this world and fulfills His will. With the sun, the moon, and the stars in the firmament, God was manifesting His righteousness, His servants, and our hearts. And when God commanded on the fifth day to let the birds fly in the sky and the water abound with fish according to its kind, He was showing to all of us what the exact nature of true faith. Through His work of the fifth day, God manifested that we can know His righteousness through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that by believing in this Word, we can overcome all our obstacles and triumph.

On the sixth day, God made man in the likeness of His image. It was to make human beings His children that God created mankind, so



that He might reveal His righteousness, and be glorified by all of us as well. We should therefore receive the remission of our sins through the God-given gospel of the water and the Spirit and praise our just God.

And finally, God rested on the seventh day of His creation of the heavens and the earth. This seventh day manifests that God wanted to be glorified alone, for He planned everything and fulfilled it all according to His intentions. It means that by thus creating the universe and mankind, God completed everything according to His will. It was to give us the true remission of sin, to bless us to become His children, and to bring the Kingdom of Heaven to us, that God rested on the seventh day.

From the whole Word of Genesis, all of us must realize what God's intention for mankind is, believe in it, and thereby reach our salvation. Our predecessors of faith all believed and lived

according to the Word of God, and they came into God's rest before us to live in glory.

Living in this last age, we must know God's good intention properly and believe in it. It is clear that the second coming of the Lord is now near us. As such, those who believe in the righteousness of God should not fall into some vague Christian doctrines and simply waste away precious time, but they should instead spread God's righteousness through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is when we live by trusting in the Word of the water and the Spirit, where the righteousness of God is manifested, that we will enjoy true rest. Abiding in God's righteousness, we must be filled with faith in Jesus Christ. It is by knowing and believing in the righteousness of God that we can enjoy true hope, true rest, and true eternal life.

Henceforth, there will be far more people all over the world preaching the gospel of the water



and the Spirit. At the same time, however, we can also see that even though the people of the world say that the end of the world is near, few actually show any real interests in their own salvation. In this present age, we see how most Christians are ignorant of the righteousness of God, and how false doctrines and aberrant acts are running rampant in Christianity. Countless Christians are now suffering from spiritual thirst and perishing away, unable to solve the problem of their sins.

Now, we have the calling to spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit throughout the whole world. At this present time, when the second coming of Jesus Christ and the Day of Judgment are near, we must recognize God's intention properly in our lives. We will then recognize what it is that we must know and what it is that we must believe. If you are still living in sorrow imprisoned by sin, I admonish you to believe in

the gospel of the water and the Spirit as soon as possible, the gospel that God has given you, and receive your true salvation.

As you carry on with your lives in this age, you have to examine carefully what kind of truth you should believe. You should learn the definitive Truth of salvation in God's righteousness, and you should live with the full conviction of the will of God. For those whose faith is still young, we need to teach them correctly what the righteousness of God is saying. In these end times, the task to which we must devote ourselves, as those who were born again first, is to correctly teach others about the gospel of the water and the Spirit manifesting the righteousness of God, so that they may believe and receive the remission of their sins; and to those who have received the remission of their sins, our task is to teach them to be fully dedicated to the righteous work that serves God's



righteousness. We must succeed in our endeavor to live the rest of our lives by trusting in the righteousness of God, and then go to stand before the presence of the Lord.

I send my greetings to all my colleagues scattered all over the world. These sermons are intended for God's children who already believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, as well as all those who yearn to know this righteousness, believe in it, and live for it. It is my hope and prayer that through this book, you would all come to realize and follow the will that God has in store for us humans, and to indeed triumph by your faith in God. I ask God to anoint you all with His blessings.

I believe that God's righteousness will protect you and me and bless us all. It is my sincerest desire that all of us would continue to share true fellowship in our common faith placed in the

righteousness of God, until the very day we enter and meet at the Kingdom of God. ☒

Paul C. Jong



# CHAPTER 1

---



Contents



## **The Bible Is the Word of Salvation, Not a Book of Science**

<Genesis 1:1-2>

**“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.”**

*“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.”* This passage from Genesis 1:1 is the very first verse that we come across when we open the Bible. God said, “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the

face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.” When it says here, “The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep,” this describes the condition of the hearts of those who are not born again.

The Bible is not a science book. The Bible is the Word of Truth that saves everyone from sin. It is the Word that brings the remission of sin to mankind. The Word of the Scriptures is the blessed Word of salvation that God spoke and fulfilled to mankind. As it is written, “*You search the Scriptures, for in them you think you have eternal life; and these are they which testify of Me*” (John 5:39). The Bible is the Word that enables mankind to be saved from sin and receive eternal life. Therefore, for one to be saved from his sins, he must first of all realize the condition of his heart through the Word of the Scriptures.



When God said here, “The earth was without form,” He was describing the condition of everyone’s heart. The Word of God is saying that everyone’s heart is without form like this, and that by its very nature it is fundamentally sinful. In everyone’s heart, all these three conditions of formlessness, void, and darkness are present. Put differently, formlessness, void, and sin are lodged deep in the hearts of people, in their minds and thoughts. That the thoughts of mankind are “without form” applies to those who do not know God’s Word of Truth, and consequently have not met Jesus Christ. The word “void” refers to the unsatisfied condition of the hearts of sinners. That the darkness is lodged in the depth of the human heart, on the other hand, means that the sins of mankind are hidden deep in their hearts.

For those who have not truly encountered the gospel of the water and the Spirit given to us by

the Lord, their hearts are defined by formlessness itself. In other words, they do not know what the Truth of God is—that is, they do not know what the gospel of the water and the Spirit is—and so they are wandering around, trapped in their own thoughts. The reason for this, why the people of this world are lost, is because their thoughts are fundamentally confused. Their confused thoughts make it impossible to solve all their problems on their own.

The cause as to why everyone’s heart is void and formless is the absence of the Word of Jesus in one’s heart. Put differently, it is because people failed to keep God’s Word of Truth in their hearts that their minds became void and confused. Emptiness prevails in their hearts precisely because their hearts cannot be indwelt by the Lord, who has given them the remission of their sins.





In today's Scripture passage, "darkness" refers to mankind's sin. It refers to the condition where one remains unwashed from his sins, from his failure to properly grasp the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. For everyone whose sins remain intact, it is precisely because he does not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, everyone must realize and believe according to the will of God that the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit is the Truth. However, as many people still do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, sin continues to exist in their hearts even to this day. This is because they do not realize the fact that God is the Lord who created the heavens and the earth, the entire universe and all things in it, and that Jesus has blotted out all their sins. Yet even now, most people only assert their own good deeds and do not recognize the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Bible says that such

people, seeking to establish their own righteousness, do not submit to the righteousness of God (Romans 10:2-3).

What happens to the hearts of such sinners then? As their hearts remain sinful, they are plagued by confusion, not knowing what God's Truth of salvation is. For all those who have not accepted the Word of God exactly as it is, they must study and realize properly what the Truth of the water and the Spirit is. Anyone who does not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit revealed in the Word of God is beleaguered by their own thoughts of confusion. It is such people who are sinners before God.

As mentioned, the "earth" in today's Scripture passage refers to the human heart. That the earth (one's heart) was without form and void implies that our sins before God prevent us from meeting the Lord, and as a result, our hearts are beset by confusion and emptiness. In other words,



confusion came to people's minds when they drifted away from God and slipped away from the Truth of the water, the blood, and the Spirit, not believing in God's true Word of salvation. My fellow believers, unless one believes in God as His Savior, who created the heavens and the earth, he cannot know the real Truth. And it is when one has no knowledge of the Truth of God that he is plagued by confusion. He can't realize who created everything in this world, and who God is. Countless people have fallen into such confusion, not knowing whether a rock, the sun, the moon, a big tree, or an elephant is God. That is why God, referring to the condition of the hearts of the sinful, is saying, "The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep."

When people do not acknowledge the Word of God in their hearts, they are beset by confusion. When people do not truly realize that the God

who created all things is none other than Jesus Christ; that Jesus came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man; that He took upon all the sins of mankind once for all through the baptism He received from John the Baptism; that He shed His precious blood on the Cross; and that He rose from the dead again and ascended to Heaven, they are all bound to live their entire lifetime imprisoned in confusion, void, and darkness. That is why so many people are unable to be saved from their sins, forever wandering in confusion, void, and darkness.

My fellow believers, Jesus Christ created the universe together with God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Is this true or not? Of course it's true. This means that Jesus Christ is the Master of the universe. Mankind's sin is none other than drifting away from the God of Truth, neither believing in Jesus Christ as the Savior, nor believing in this Jesus who came by the gospel of



the water and the Spirit with the heart (John 16:9). Isn't it a sin for human beings not to believe in the Lord who created them as their Master, and not to recognize their original Master? Of course it is. In other words, it constitutes a sin when one does not believe in Jesus Christ as his Savior, and fails to believe that He has blotted out our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. For one to drift away from Jesus Christ is the very sin that leads him to fall into destruction. This is the path that leads mankind to confusion. Those who drift away from God not believing in Him are lost, for they do not believe in the Word of Truth.

## **The Void and Sin in People's Hearts**

There is no one else but only Jesus who can give true satisfaction to us human beings.

However, because people do not accept what Jesus our Savior achieved when He came to this earth, Christ cannot enter and dwell in their hearts, and that is why there is only emptiness in their hearts.

To fill their empty hearts, people must accept into their hearts the Word of Jesus, who is full of all truths. To do so, we must believe with our hearts in everything that Jesus did when He came to this earth. We must accept into our hearts that Jesus was baptized to take upon all our sins, that He shed His blood and died on the Cross, and that He rose from the dead again. If you really recognize with your hearts and accept what Jesus did for you, then the void in your hearts will surely disappear.

The human heart is also characterized by darkness. When the Bible says, "Darkness was on the face of the deep," it means that everyone's sins are lodged so deep in his heart that he

himself does not realize this. It also means that human beings try to hide their sins in their lives. My fellow believers, if one hides his sins and refuses to recognize his sinfulness, then he will continue to live imprisoned in darkness. And he will not be born again into someone who can please God. If one does not realize and admit just how weak and evil he is, then he won't be able to recognize the God of mercy in the end, and fail to meet the God of salvation through the Word.

Unless one acknowledges the Word of God, he can never realize his true self, and if one does not realize his true self, then he will be forsaking God. It is because people cannot acknowledge God that they try to hide their sins, attempting to establish themselves as virtuous people and protect themselves all on their own. This is what happens when one does not acknowledge God's Word of Truth.

This, my fellow believers, is a sin. All who have drifted away from God, and who do not believe in His Word, are sinners. From the very beginning, God was speaking to such sinners, telling them that their hearts are without form and void, and that darkness is in the face of the deep.

## **God Works in Us Only through His Word**

The Bible says that the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the water. Through what does God remit away sinner's transgressions? It is through His Word that God remits away all the sins of all the people.

In the Bible, this "water" refers to God's Word of Truth. The "earth" refers to the human heart. And the "sea" refers to the world.



When it says here, “The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters,” it indicates where the Spirit of God works, implying that the Holy Spirit works within the bounds of His Spoken Word. When people hold onto the Word of God and believe in this Word, God will work in their hearts with His Word, completely blot out all the sins of their hearts, and save them all. God created the universe with His Word, and it is also with the Word that He has remitted away all the sins of every sinner.

What, then, does it mean when the Bible says that the Holy Spirit, who is God Himself, was hovering above the water? It means that the hallowed Spirit of God—that is, the Holy Spirit—could not enter into the hearts of the sinful. This passage tells us that although God wants to dwell in people’s hearts and be with them, He cannot do this as long as there is sin in their hearts.

God the Holy Spirit wants to come into everyone’s hearts, but He can only come into the hearts of those who have received the remission of their sins. That is why one must believe in the Word spoken by Jesus, and accept into his heart the remission of sin that came by the water and the Spirit. It is then that the Lord can come into us.

Who created the universe? It’s Jesus, God Himself. Fundamentally speaking, Jesus is God Himself, the One who made us and created the universe. And Jesus is the Savior God who came to this earth to save us mankind from all our sins. Jesus is the God who made all nature. How, then, can we meet this Jesus? It is through God’s Word of Truth that we can meet Jesus. When we believe in the gospel Word of the Truth of the remission of sin, we can indeed be forgiven from all our sins and meet God. We can then realize who God is; what kind of relationship we have



with God; what the sin that God speaks of is; what the salvation—that is, the remission of sin—that God speaks of is; what the God-given eternal life is; and what kind of blessings God has given us. It is by believing in Jesus that we can believe in God with our hearts.

God works in those who believe in this true Word of salvation. And it is the believers in this Word whom God saves, granting them the remission of all their sins. The Lord has given the remission of sin to those who believe in God's Word of salvation. However, if someone neither hears nor believes in God's Word of Truth, and therefore his heart's sins remain intact, then God cannot come into his heart. That is why God is hovering around us, telling us to first receive the remission of sin that He is offering to everyone so freely. And that is why the Bible says, "The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters."

What, then, is mankind's sin? First, it is the rejection of God's Word of salvation, which brings the true remission of sin, and the refusal to believe in it with the heart. For mankind to disbelieve in God's Truth of salvation is to commit a great sin against God. People often consider it a sin only when they commit a particularly grave transgression, but that is not the only sin. Not to believe in Jesus Christ, who is the Word itself, is a sin. The real, most fundamental sin is the failure to acknowledge and believe in the Word of God.

Yet despite this, those who have fallen into confusion think on their own irrespective of God, believing that it is only when they commit a certain wrongdoing that this insufficiency of their acts constitutes a sin. In contrast, when God created the heavens and the earth, He spoke to mankind that sin is not to believe in His



existence and His Word, making it clear that this is the beginning of sin, its origin and its essence.

What kind of sinners, then, have human beings become by not believing in God and His Word? God said to Adam and Eve, *“Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die”* (Genesis 2:16-17). Even though Adam did believe in God, he did not believe in His spoken Word in its entirety, and so he ended up eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. It is from here that sin began.

As Adam and Eve did not believe in God’s Word, what were the consequences that followed from this? Human beings, deceived by the temptation of Satan, ended up becoming sinners, leaving God behind, committing sin before Him, rejecting His Word, and, even worse, siding with the Devil. By not believing in God’s Word,

human beings found themselves as sinners to be accursed. All those who have drifted away from God disbelieving His Word have become sinners before God. And mankind was accursed, destined to be condemned by God.

For a sinner to be saved from God’s curse, he must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that has become the righteousness of God. Only when mankind believes in this Word of Truth can it return to God. All of us human beings must return to the true Word of God, accept it and believe in it. For a sinner to return to God, he must turn around from his disbelief, from his refusal to believe in God’s Word of Truth.

From the Book of Genesis, all of us can find out what the God-spoken sin is, how God comes to sinners, and how His work of salvation and blessings were prepared. When we humans fell into sin, our Lord Jesus, who is God Himself,



came to us as the Savior of sinners, and remitted away all the sins of every sinner. It is with His Word that God created the heavens and the earth. Likewise, it is also with His Word that God has given us the remission of our sins, and the Kingdom of Heaven as well.

## **When God Created the Heavens and the Earth, He Made Them with His Word**

When God made everything under the heavens and on the earth, He commanded with His Word. He said: “Let there be light”; “Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters”; “Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its

kind, whose seed is in itself”; “Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens”; and, “Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind.”

God created everything with the Word that came out of His lips. Just as the whole universe and everything in it came into existence all because of the Lord’s Word, so has mankind’s remission of sin come to us by the Word of the Lord. To save us, who fell into sin not believing in God’s true Word of salvation, our Lord comes looking for us once again by God’s Word of righteousness. We must realize that it is neither by our dreams nor by our visions that our God comes to us, but He comes to us by the Word of righteousness. The Lord does not meet us through some sort of mystical experiences.





It is written, *“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light” (Genesis 1:1-3).*

This passage means that just as God created this whole universe with the Word, so has God come to sinners by His Word of righteousness when we fell into sin. And it means that the Lord has saved sinners from their iniquities and completed their remission of sin exactly as God spoke.

To save all the human beings that fell into sin, Jesus came looking for them with the Lord’s Word of Truth. As Adam and Eve fell into sin, everyone else became a sinner as well. How did our Lord come looking for such people? He

came by the Word of Truth and grace. Let us turn to Isaiah 55:1-3 here:

*“Ho! Everyone who thirsts,  
Come to the waters;  
And you who have no money,  
Come, buy and eat.*

*Yes, come, buy wine and milk  
Without money and without price.*

*Why do you spend money for what is not  
bread,*

*And your wages for what does not satisfy?  
Listen carefully to Me, and eat what is good,  
And let your soul delight itself in abundance.  
Incline your ear, and come to Me.*

*Hear, and your soul shall live;*

*And I will make an everlasting covenant with  
you—*

*The sure mercies of David.”*

When everyone’s thoughts were trapped in confusion, and the heart was void with darkness



on the face of the deep, our Lord came by the true Word of salvation to all the sinners who had left God and His Word. As written, “Incline your ear, and come to Me. Hear, and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting covenant with you—The sure mercies of David.” It is by the Word of His righteousness that God came to us again.

## You Must Return to the Word of God

None other than the very Bible that you and I have is the Word of God. The Bible itself is God’s Word. We must know the Word of God and accept it by faith. Of the three Persons of God—the Father, the Son, and the Spirit—the Son is the very Word of God. This Word itself that we are now reading is God Himself (John 1:1).

As this is true, when those who believe in the Lord read the written Word of the Scriptures, they do so believing that it is the very Word of God. In contrast, sinners who do not believe in the Lord do not believe that the Bible is the Word of God, nor do they believe that the Word is God Himself.

God is Spirit, but He is also Logos—that is, the Word itself. The true Word of the Bible is God’s Word. And the Word is God Himself. The Lord Jesus came into the hearts of sinners by the Word of salvation, for He is the God of the Word. Coming to sinners by His Word, God said,

*“Seek the LORD while He may be found,  
Call upon Him while He is near.  
Let the wicked forsake his way,  
And the unrighteous man his thoughts;  
Let him return to the LORD,  
And He will have mercy on him;  
And to our God,*



*For He will abundantly pardon”  
(Isaiah 55:6-7).*

Were it not for the Word that God spoke to us, how else could we believe in the Lord as our Savior? How else could we meet the Lord? If the Lord were to call our names and appear in our vision in all His glory, and say to us, “I am taking away all your sins,” we would all faint and die. Unlike us, God does not have a body. He came to us and spoke to us as the Word of Truth itself. He said to us, “Seek the LORD while He may be found, call upon Him while He is near. Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts; let him return to the LORD, and He will have mercy on him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon.”

God is near us through His Word. While the Lord is in the hearts of the saved, for unbelievers, He is very near them, as the Word of God. The Lord is always near sinners, together with them

as the Word. If sinners call upon God while still alive, if they really look for Him, God will surely meet them through His Word.

To find God, the wicked must first forsake their way, and the unrighteous their thoughts. The word wicked here refers to those who do not acknowledge God’s Word of righteousness. The wicked must turn around from their way of not recognizing God’s righteousness. Those who are unrighteous before God are those who do not acknowledge God’s Word of Truth and commit sin, and along with the wicked, they must also forsake their unbelieving thoughts and return to the God of Truth. The wicked and the unrighteous are all sinners alike, and for such sinners to return to God, they must come into the gospel by believing in the righteousness of God, regardless of what kind of sin they may have fallen into.



To do so, they must first realize just how abjectly they have failed to recognize God's Word of righteousness. All sinners can meet God and believe in Him only when they admit the wickedness in themselves, recognize their failure, acknowledge God's existence, and admit that God is their Lord and their Savior. Every sinner can return to God, but only if he acknowledges and believes in the God-spoken Word of Truth.

It is when we acknowledge the Word of God by believing in it with our hearts that we can return to God. Do you understand this? This is the only way for mankind who has left God to return to Him. A sinner can be restored and return to God only if he acknowledges the sovereignty of Him and recognizes the His spoken Word.

## **To Return to God, Cast aside Your Own Thoughts First**

One cannot return to God just by calling on the name of the Lord, shouting out, "Lord!" Some pastors make such a claim, citing a passage from Romans, which says, "*Whoever calls on the name of the LORD shall be saved*" (Romans 10:13). However, it is absolutely not the case that one can return to God just by saying, "God, I believe." This is all nothing more than one's own thought. For everyone, it is only when one recognizes the Word of God that he can return to God and meet Him. The wicked can return to God only when they forsake their thoughts.

We the righteous people who have been saved, and the unsaved sinners alike, have all committed so many wrongdoings before God. Yet despite this, God took away all these iniquities through His righteousness. He took



upon Himself all the sins that we commit out of our mistaken thoughts, misunderstandings, and weaknesses. Our Lord took away all these sins that people commit out of their weaknesses and ignorance. Do you realize just how ignorant we humans are before God? Just how often have we thought wrongly, misconceived and misunderstood, and failed to see straight, all because we have no perception whatsoever? That is why we end up committing sin in this world. Yet despite all this, didn't Jesus take away all these sins? Indeed, Jesus shouldered all our sins and took them all away. Jesus is our Savior.

In the passage from Isaiah quoted above, it was said,

*“Let the wicked forsake his way,  
And the unrighteous man his thoughts;  
Let him return to the LORD,  
And He will have mercy on him;  
And to our God,*

*For He will abundantly pardon.”*

God is telling us to abandon our own thoughts and return to Jehovah. My fellow believers, do you realize just how evil our thoughts are before God? Our thoughts are wickedness itself.

Of course, our Lord took away all these mistaken thoughts as well, but there still are so many erudite philosophers and scientists who deny the existence of God. They are the ones whose hearts have been all hardened by their thoughts. They say, “Where is God? How could Jesus be God, and how could God be the God of the Word? How could He make the whole universe and mankind? Everything came into existence through evolution.” So many people in this world think like this.

However, God is saying to the wicked to forsake their thoughts and to return to Jehovah. God is saying that for sinners to be remitted from their sins, they must first cast aside their evil



thoughts and believe in the righteousness of God. We must realize just how evil our thoughts are. And we must realize that before God, the arrogance of not believing in God's Word is a great sin.

Even so, our Lord took upon all the sins of mankind by being baptized, from the sins committed out of weaknesses to the wickedness of our thoughts and acts alike. That is why we can return to Jehovah God by faith. God is saying, "Let the wicked forsake their thoughts and return to Me." Are our thoughts flawed or flawless before God? Are your thoughts upright or immoral? We have to realize all the thoughts that we have apart from the Word, other than our faith in the God-spoken Word and the thoughts that stem from this faith, are evil. Man-made thoughts are fundamentally fallacious. Between our own thoughts and the Word of God, which is right? It is of course God's Word that is right.

Friedrich Nietzsche (1844-1900), a German existential philosopher, concluded on his own that God was dead. He thought, "It's because God is dead that the wicked are so powerful in this world even though they practice evil so much! That's why God is dead!" While Nietzsche was on a voyage, he was shipwrecked and got on a lifeboat. But the waves were so high that he was about to drown, and it's said that he ended up praying to God, begging, "God, please save me!" Nietzsche, who had declared God to be dead, asked God to save him.

So God saved him, and he set his foot on land again. After a few days, when Nietzsche gave a lecture, he once again claimed, "There is no God. God is dead." At the lecture, there were some passengers who had been shipwrecked with Nietzsche, and they were heard saying, "That fellow Nietzsche is a strange guy. When he was in the sea, he said that God was alive, but now



that he is on land, he says that God is dead. So his ideas must be false.”

This is how all humans think. When they face some dire emergency, they look for God, but once they are comfortable, they say that God is dead. Why do they do this? It is because such people do not want to surrender to God. None other than this is the sin of not believing in God, and such people are the evilest of sinners who have left God.

## **God’s Word of Truth Is Different from the Thoughts of Mankind**

If you want your souls to be saved from sin, then cast aside your own human thoughts. And think about the baptism and the Cross of Jesus Christ, who came by the Word of God. Our fallacious thoughts make us reject Jesus’ Word.

The Lord is saying, *“Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest” (Matthew 11:28).*

The Lord took upon Himself all of our sins through His baptism. Therefore, for sinners to meet God, they must cast aside their own thoughts and return to Jesus Christ. The Bible says that God will then “have mercy on” them. Out of His compassion for sinners, Jesus took all their transgressions upon His own body through the baptism given by John over 2,000 years ago.

It is written:

*“For My thoughts are not your thoughts,  
Nor are your ways My ways,” says the LORD.  
For as the heavens are higher than the earth,  
So are My ways higher than your ways,  
And My thoughts than your thoughts”  
(Isaiah 55:8-9).*

God’s righteous thoughts and our human thoughts are fundamentally different. They are



on a completely different level. In our own thoughts we humans complain, “Why did God make me in the first place, to suffer like this in this world? I don’t understand why He made me like this, why He had me be born like this.” And those who blame God also blame their parents. They think, “I just can’t figure out why my parents didn’t leave me any inheritance, why they had me in the first place when they were so poor, and why they let me live like this, suffering so much and despised by so many.” Not only is this just confined to their thoughts alone, but they actually say so bluntly to their parents.

However, our Lord says that He permitted suffering so that He may save all the sinners who had left God from sin and clothe them in His glory, so that He may allow them to look for and seek God. Mankind would not look for God if there was no suffering on this earth and everything was just fine. And if human beings

had no insufficiencies or weaknesses, then they could not become God’s children by believing in Jesus. That is why God has permitted mankind to suffer on this earth, but just for a while. It’s because mankind’s thoughts and God’s thoughts are completely different.

People say, “God probably made us out of boredom, as His toys to entertain Himself.” Many are prone to think like this. That’s why some people curse God and point their fingers at Him. However, God’s thoughts are different from our thoughts.

God made us human beings in order to turn us into His people and His children, so that we may live happily in the paradise on earth and in the Kingdom of Heaven. God created mankind so that we may enjoy eternal, never-ending life just like God Himself. It is with such a plan that God made us, and to fulfill all these purposes, Jesus was baptized, died on the Cross, and rose from





the dead again, thus achieving them all. None other than this is God's providence.

God made mankind in order to bring true happiness and blessings to us human beings. However, this is not how we think in our man-made thoughts, and instead we often blame God, uttering blasphemous words, "If God made mankind, He shouldn't have made the wicked or the Devil."

Did God make the Devil? No. Satan the Devil was an angel originally. This angel fell because he tried to exalt himself higher than God. That is why the angel became Satan. And you should also realize the fact that it is to enable us to be saved from sin by believing in the His righteousness that God permitted the people of Israel not to accept Him.

To explain the will of God more easily, let me draw a parallel here to the relationship between a five-year-old child and his parents. When adults

are about to carry out some task, they carefully make all the necessary preparations before they actually begin. But a child cannot understand this, no matter how hard one might try to explain it.

Let's assume here that we are making some noodle soup. When we make noodle soup, we first pour flour into a bowl. The child in our example, only a five-year old, sees this and asks, "Why are you pouring the flour?" We then pour some water into the bowl. The child asks again, "Why do you pour water in there?" He just can't understand why water is poured, as it makes no sense to him at all. We then begin to knead the dough. The child asks, "Why are you kneading?" We then roll the dough with a roller. The child then again asks, "Why are you rolling?"

For the child, everything is curious and questionable. When we cut the flattened dough, the child asks again, "Why do you cut it?"; when



we boil the water, he asks, “Why do you boil the water?”; and when we put the noodle soup into the boiling water, he asks again, “Why do you put the noodle soup there? Why do you boil it?”

None of the child’s questions may be answered to the end, but once we let him try the noodle soup and taste it, he would then realize, “Ah, so this is what noodle soup is.” Meanwhile, all the steps that were taken to make the noodle soup are lost to him. He only looks at their result, which is the noodle soup that he gets to taste, and all that he can grasp is, “Oh, so this is noodle soup. Wow! It’s so delicious!”

Like this, the child cannot comprehend all the steps that his parents took to make the noodle soup. Likewise, no matter how we are told of the purpose for which God created us, and how this goal and the process by which God makes us His children to live happily are explained to us, it’s

still very hard for us to understand it all, for we are just like this child.

## **We Must Acknowledge the Infallibility of the Word of God**

To do so is to recognize God’s goodness. God made everyone to bless him. Put differently, it is to bless us that God made us be born on this earth. God says that He has made His vineyard and planted it with the choicest vine, and that He expects it to bring forth good grapes (Isaiah 5:2) If God had a certain plan to make the highest-quality grapes, and He made them somehow, then we must accept all the steps.

Yet despite this, people still do not believe in God. It’s because of this disbelief that they are to be cast into a dumpster. If one does not acknowledge God as God, then as the wage of



this sin, it is only fitting for him to be cast into the never-ending pit of fire to suffer forever. It is only a matter of course that unbelievers should be cast into hell.

Some people may then ask, “God shouldn’t have made hell. Why did He make it?” My fellow believers, it is not proper for a creature not to recognize its Maker. The Bible illustrates this point by drawing an analogy to a potter. If we were making a vessel, and for some reason we were not happy with it, and so we shattered it and threw it away, have we done anything wrong here? No, as its maker, we have done nothing wrong. When we consider this, we can grasp that all that we can do, as mere creatures before God our Creator, is just believe in Him and accept what He has given us, and that there is nothing for which we can blame God.

Are we the Creator? No, we are no more than creatures. Whatever might be done to creatures,

it is the Maker’s right. When God made us with a good plan for a good purpose, for us to not to surrender to this is itself wrong and evil. None other than this is wickedness from the Devil. It is to challenge God. God walks according to the Word of Truth, and we have to realize that for us not to believe in this God, and not to believe in the Word He spoke, is a sin. And we must realize that the Spirit of God is hovering over the face of the waters. God works according to His own Word. When we acknowledge this Word, believe in it and follow it, then we can find God for sure.

## **The Word of God Works in the Human Heart**

If we were to believe in and seek after only mystical experiences or natural revelations, rather than believing in the Word of God, then



we will not be able to find God. Do you grasp this? It is written, “*The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.*” The Bible does not write that the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters just because He was bored. Is God somehow unable to hover over the earth? Why wouldn’t God be able to walk on the earth? Far from it, Jesus Christ came to this earth and walked on it. This passage means that the Holy Spirit cannot dwell in the hearts of the sinful.

The special message that God is conveying to us here is that sinners must return to the Word to find God. So only those who returned to the Word have found God and were born again. That is why the Bible makes the following two points: “For you to be saved from sin, first, you must realize that you are nothing more than piles of sin, and second, you must be born again through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit.” In

other words, one is born again by the Word of God and the Holy Spirit that seals him with the seal of God.

We must know what is sin before God, and who God is. We must realize that the hearts of those who have left God are confused and void, and that darkness is on the face of the deep. Not to believe in God’s Word, none other than this is sin. For us to return to God, we must return to the Word, and only then can we find God. The Word is God Himself, and God works through His Word. Realizing this, we must all return to the Word.

We the righteous should also cast aside our own thoughts. Even for us the righteous, to be blessed, we must throw away our own thoughts. It is when we know the Word of God that we can believe in Him. And when we acknowledge the Word, we can believe in God, return to Him, and receive all His blessings. In particular, those who



have just recently received the remission of sin, and those who still remain doubtful and confused, should turn to the Word of God. And they should listen to the Word and meditate deeply on what the Word actually says.

The same admonishment applies to sinners as well. If sinners were not to return to this Word, and if they were not to know the Word of God and return to its way, how else could they find God, and how else could they receive the remission of their sins from Jesus? For these sinners too, it is only when they return to the Word that they can find Jesus, find God, find their Creator, and be saved from their sins.

That is why we say that the Word of the Scriptures is the Canon, which means “the measuring rod of salvation, the barometer that enables us to meet God, and the standard for all judgment.” The Bible is not something written by a man. God Himself wrote this Bible, and

even at this very moment, it continues to transform countless lives. When we read the Bible, we can realize that there indeed is God and find Him. And when we believe in the Word, this Word comes into our hearts and works in our lives.

The Word comes into our minds to work in our lives, and it also breaks down our mistaken thoughts. And the Word enables us to receive the remission of our sins and to follow the will of God. As the Word is alive and dynamic, it works in the believers’ hearts with power.

*“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.”* How does God meet us human beings, who fell into sin? From today’s Scripture passage, we have now seen the answer to this question, on how God comes to us and works in our lives. It is through His Word that God comes looking for us and works in this world. Do you now realize this?



I give all my thanks to our Lord. We had indeed fallen into confusion and void, and yet our Lord came looking for us and met us through the Word. Those who are young in faith and those who just heard the Word and received the remission of their sins only recently, should take particular heed to listen to the Word as often as possible.

I admonish you to never miss the hours of worship and gatherings, but to take part in all. That's because "faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God" (Romans 10:17). It is when we hear the true gospel Word of the water and the Spirit that we can know God and all our questions are answered.

The Word of God is not a science book, but it is the Word of salvation. ☒



## Have You Become Light in the Gospel of Truth?

### <Genesis 1:2-3>

**“The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light.”**

By creating the universe and all creatures in it, God revealed His great and majestic plan through Jesus Christ. Chapter 1 of the Book of Genesis shows us the majestic plan that God has prepared for mankind. In other words, the creation of the heavens and the earth and of all creatures, the making of mankind in the likeness of the image

of God, the fall of mankind deceived by Satan, salvation through Jesus Christ, our becoming God’s children in His providence, and the blessings of the everlasting grace of God—all these things are shown in this first chapter of Genesis.

That is why it is written, *“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth,”* and this is followed by, *“The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters” (Genesis 1:2).* When it says here, “The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep,” this implies the condition of mankind and all things created by God that fell into confusion deceived by Satan, a fallen spiritual creature. Put differently, it describes mankind’s fall into sin.

First of all, we must reach the proper understanding of the will of God who created the



universe and all creatures in it. If we do not know God's will, or, even worse, misunderstand it, then we are at great risk. Everything under the heavens has its existential purpose. When God created us, He essentially decided to adopt us as His children in Jesus Christ. Even before the foundation of the world, in other words, God already had in His mind a plan to make us His children and thereby lifting us up as divine beings.

That is why God made us according to His plan, allowed us to face hardship while living on this earth, made us look for Him through such difficulties, permitted us to find the gospel of Truth that has blotted out our sins through Jesus Christ, and in doing so, God adopted us as His Children and gave us His beautiful Kingdom. Like this, God has shown us that nothing depends on our own will, but everything has come only by His will. Therefore, as we live in

this world, feeling and reflecting on these things, we experience for ourselves that what we want to do is not achieved according to our own will, but according to how God had already predestined originally; all that we do is enter into God's domain by believing in and accepting His Word and then follow Him by faith. That is why Jesus said, "*I am the Way*" (*John 14:6*).

It is when we read the Bible that we can fully grasp God's plan. God had a plan for mankind, and He has also shown us His plan by manifesting it in the Word according to how He planned. Therefore, it is in the Word of God that we can discover the will of God, and it is by believing in this Word and following it that we can find God. So when we believe in God, it is according to His promised Word that we should know and believe in God.

If you are to think all on your own without giving any heed to God's Word of promises,





decide all for yourselves and try to find God all on your own, then from then on, you will only fall into confusion. To find God, one must believe in His promised Word and follow it; only then can we meet God. That is why God has given us the Bible.

Without the Bible, the Word of God, it is impossible for us to find God. The Bible is the Word of God. And it is the Word of a covenant, which God has fulfilled and will continue to fulfill. The Bible writes that God is the God of the Word, who planned with the Word, fulfilled this plan for us with the Word, and came to us and met us through the Word.

The Word is God (John 1:1). God is the Word, and when He manifests Himself before mankind, He does so through the Word of promise. We should all clearly realize that God has already revealed Himself through His Word, and that He

is the God of promise who meets us through this Word.

We must not read the Bible as if we were reading a novel or a history book. Rather, we must realize and believe that this Word in itself is the Word of promise spoken by God. It is in His Word that God reveals Himself to us. So whenever you and I read the Bible, we should all first realize that it is the Word that God promised to us.

## **The Bible Is the Light of Salvation to Mankind**

It is written, *“The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light... God divided the*



*light from the darkness. God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night” (Genesis 1:2-5).*

In this passage God called the light day and the darkness night, thereby setting forth God’s indomitable will to drive out sin from the souls that are bound in it. It is saying that what drives out this sin, all this confusion, void, and darkness, is the light.

Who, then, is this light? It is none other than Jesus Christ, the Savior. Who, then, are the formless and void, those who have darkness on the face of the deep? They refer to none other than ourselves. This describes us humans, who, though created by God, were deceived by evil Satan and fell into confusion. From the very beginning, God was promising the following: “When you fall into confusion, I will save you with the light. And those who accept the light

will become light, but those who do not accept the light will become darkness.”

When we create something, we have in advance a certain purpose for having it created. There is nothing that is created without a purpose. When God created the heavens and the earth and created mankind in the beginning, His plan was to raise us as His children, and to glorify us in this position as His own children, so that we would not exist as merely simple creatures any longer.

This is what the Bible is saying: In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth, and when He created us His creatures, He did not make us as robots, but He gave free will to all of us. God is saying to us, “Each of you can either accept or reject My grace and my blessings. I made you as creatures with the freedom of choice.”



John 3:20-21 states, *“For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed. But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God.”*

We the born-again can clearly distinguish the light from darkness. However, the confused people who are still under sin cannot discern the light from darkness. They, instead, generally hate the light and love evil. Nonetheless, the right to choose which of these two we would accept belongs entirely to us. Had God not given us this right to choose—that is, had He not given us free will—then we could not say that God is just.

On the other hand, had God left everyone all alone to be cast into hell, then nor could we say that God is holy and just. God is saying, “I am the Almighty, but I have given you free will. So if you really love goodness, then follow this

goodness and receive all My blessings, and live in Me. But if you love darkness, then feel free to do so.”

Therefore, those who have come into God’s light chose God, acknowledged Him and believed in Him, and for this choice, they will all receive the blessings of salvation from God and live forever. Those who fail to do so, on the other hand, will deservedly be cast into hell and made to suffer and gnash their teeth in pain, for they chose their own wickedness. This is the righteous Truth of God, and this is what reveals God’s divinity. It manifests that God is completely perfect. God did not coerce us into anything, but He manifested Himself through His covenant, and made us praise Him justly.

By giving us His grace and Truth, God has stipulated us to rule over all other creatures and be served by them. It is those who choose before God what is right—the light, that is—whom God



bleses. But for those who choose evil, God judges their sins according to His justice. This is who our God is as revealed in the Bible.

God is the God of a covenant. No one can say that God is unjust and unfair. God has given mankind the right to choose. The Bible is saying that if anyone likes curses over blessings, it has been established for whoever wants this to have it. In contrast, to those who like the light and have accepted into their lives this light, the Word of God, God will give all the blessings that He promised. God has allowed whoever wants to be blessed by Him, who created the heavens and the earth, to choose His goodness and to receive the blessings of salvation and eternal life.

God, who created the heavens and the earth, is speaking to us. God is perfect. He alone is righteous, perfect, and is divine for all creatures. He is the Creator. He is the Absolute Being. There is no one who can object to this.

Through the Word, we saw the God of the covenant who promised us with the Word and fulfilled this Word of promise to us. God created the heavens and the earth in the beginning. God actually made everything, darkness and light alike. Do you acknowledge this? The right to choose has been given to all human beings, and it is according to their choice that the grace of God has been bestowed upon them.

In the Kingdom of God, there is no such a word as “no,” but only “yes.” In other words, there is only the infallible Truth. That there is only “yes” means that there is nothing negative.

It is written, “*The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light*” (Genesis 1:2-3). When the Bible says that “God created the heavens and the earth,” and follows on to say,



“The earth was without form, and void,” it implies that even before the foundation of the world, God’s plan was already premised on the temptation of Satan.

If chapters 1 and 2 of the Book of Genesis are describing God’s plan, then from chapter 3 and subsequently, it is about the fulfillment of this plan. We may say that God implemented His entire plan step by step. Architects in this world change their construction plans several times when building just one building. However, God has never changed His plan once He designed it. He executed everything exactly according to how He planned. God did not just leave His creatures merely as creatures, but He planned for them to be born again by being recreated. What set mankind free from sin was the light. The Word of God was the resource that enabled people to escape from sin.

If mankind were not formless and void, and there were no darkness on the face of the deep—that is, if mankind were not deceived by Satan—then human beings could not have put on the grace that set them free from sin and become God’s children. It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that all of us have been allowed to put on the grace of salvation that Jesus Christ has given to us and to become God’s children. Our glory was already prepared by the providence of God in His plan.

Adam and Eve, the common ancestors of mankind, were deceived by Satan. However, even this was included in God’s predestination. Maggots live for many years under the ground in the larval stage, but they eventually climb up to a tree and are transformed through metamorphosis to open their wings and become cicadas. To become cicadas, they must all invariably live as maggots in the dark underground. Like this, that



we human beings were tempted by Satan and fell into sin was also predestined in God's glorious plan. In other words, God permitted us to be tempted by Satan because only if we became sinners first could we be transformed into God's children by believing in Jesus Christ.

That people are formless and void, and darkness is on the face of the deep, is a condition that has resulted from leaving the light of God. When one departs from God, the Creator who made him, and from His Word of the covenant, his heart is visited by confusion and void. Just as the first man Adam fell into confusion by departing from the Word of God, among the descendants of Adam now, those who have failed to meet Jesus Christ through the Word of covenant have all fallen into confusion. Why have they fallen into confusion? It is because they do not know the God-given gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. This is why they cannot

know God, who meets us through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. Given this, then, what must people do to escape from their confusion? If they return to God's Word of Truth, they can surely find God.

Moreover, everyone has fallen into a void because of their sins. So people have no satisfaction. We human beings are void unless we meet the God of Truth. Human beings were imperfect when they were first created. God permitted this imperfection first in order to make us perfect in His plan. Since it is the perfect God who created us, unless we have Him inside us, we would remain imperfect, have no true satisfaction, and fall into a void. Therefore, because God fundamentally made us human beings in His image when He created us, to find true satisfaction, everyone must be born again without fail. In other words, in people's hearts there must be the gospel Truth of the water and



the Spirit given by Jesus Christ, and only when we have the Holy Spirit inside us can we be made perfect. One is truly satisfied only when he finds Jesus Christ.

All of us were deceived by Satan's evil schemes, and as a result, we all fell into confusion, void, and sin. God said that He would save such people like us through His Son Jesus Christ. From what did He promise to save us? He promised to save us from confusion, void, and sin. He promised to save us from our sins, from our profound emptiness, and from our unquenchable dissatisfaction. This promise of salvation was already predestined in Jesus Christ.

## **Jesus Christ the Creator Is the Savior of Those Who Believe in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

The Lord of the universe is Jesus Christ. When it is written in the Bible, "God said, 'Let there be light'; and there was light," the light here is none other than Jesus Christ who has saved you and me from our sins. Who created the universe and all things in it with the Word? It is Jesus Christ Himself. It is this very Jesus Christ who created everything that our eyes see, from the heavens to the earth, from the mountains to the seas, and from flowers to all life forms.

*"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Genesis 1:1).* The One who created this earth and these heavens is Jesus Christ, and what we must all realize is that God has blotted out our sins by sending us this Son of



His. Who else does the Bible say Jesus Christ is? It says that Jesus Christ is the Son of God the Father. As it is written, *“I will declare the decree: The LORD has said to Me, ‘You are My Son, Today I have begotten You’” (Psalms 2:7)*, the Bible says that Jesus was begotten by the Father. However, the Bible also says that the Son of God the Father is the same true God as the Father (1 John 5:20).

That is why the Apostle John, who saw Jesus Christ with his own eyes and touched Him with his own hands, and who had lived with Him for three years, declared, “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God” (John 1:1). In other words, Jesus is the very God who created the universe. God the Father built the Kingdom of Heaven through His Son, and Jesus Christ created the heavens and the earth that our eyes now see. All of us

must know this Jesus Christ accurately, that He is God Himself.

What else did God say? He said that He would save us from all our sins through His sinless Son. God is the God of Truth. When the Son of God the Father made this world, God said that it was good to see the world that was illuminated by the Light. And the Bible says, *“That was the true Light which gives light to every man coming into the world” (John 1:9)*.

This plan of God was all revealed by the Triune God, that is, by God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. The Bible says, “The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.” Who is this Spirit that was hovering over the face of the waters? The Spirit here is the Holy Spirit. The Son of the Father is the One who made this universe, and God the Father promised that





through His Son He would save all these human beings who have fallen into confusion and void.

And God sought to bestow upon us the Spirit that makes us God's children, but this Spirit could not come into our hearts as long as there was sin inside us. That is why God the Father established a covenant with us His creatures and promised us to send His Son to this earth. The "Spirit of God" here refers to the Holy Spirit, and this Holy Spirit comes into those who believe in and follow the promised Word of God and dwells in them. This is the very plan of God. The Triune God is all manifested here. God had His complete plan for us before the creation of the world, and He has been fulfilling it step by step. We need to realize that this is why God said it was good to see when He made the domain of the earth and the domain of the heavens.

God said that when His Son created light on the first day that He made this universe, it was

good to see. In other words, God was pleased to make His creatures His own children, the same children as Jesus Christ. That is why the Apostle Paul, realizing the majestic plan of God, praised, *"Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and His ways past finding out!" (Romans 11:33)*

It is also written, *"Of Him and through Him and to Him are all things" (Romans 11:36)*. How could then a mere creature disobey its Creator? Disobedience in itself is sin. God spoke the Word of promise to us. And He is the God who separates His people from the Devil's people with His Word. If you accept the God-spoken Word into your hearts, then you, too, will become God's people. Come into the light of Truth. You will then be able to also become light.



## ***God Said, “Let There Be Light”***

The Bible says that when God made mankind and the universe, the earth was without form and void, and darkness was on the face of the deep. This is how the Bible describes the condition of those who have fallen into sin. The Bible also says that when the earth—that is, the human heart—was without form, void, and in the depth of sin, the Spirit of God was hovering on the face of the waters. Put differently, God, who created the universe and saves mankind works in the hearts of the sinful.

God speaks and has fellowship with those who come out to Him through His Word, trusting in the Word. God approves us when we believe in His Word. However, if we do not believe in the Word of God, then our own thoughts will lead us to perish in the end.

Why did Judas, who betrayed and sold out

Jesus Christ, hang himself? He should have resolved this sin by trusting in the Word of God, but the Bible writes that instead of relying on the Word, he repented all on his own and hung himself. Those whose hearts have no faith in the Word of God end up condemning their sins themselves, and therefore they cannot avoid dying forever. That Judas repented on his own only means that he was convicted by his conscience, realizing that he had made a profound mistake by betraying and selling out his own teacher to certain death just for a handful of coins.

Judas’ deed was very wicked, but his even greater spiritual mistake was the fact that he did not believe in Jesus Christ as the Son of God. We should reflect on what Jesus Christ did when He came to this earth based on the Word of both the New and Old Testaments, and from this we must realize and believe that He is God Himself and



the Son of God. However, Judas did not believe in the divinity of Jesus Christ, and so instead of repenting, “I betrayed the real Son of God. And I did not accept Him as my Savior,” he was merely convicted by his own human conscience, guilt-ridden only to the extent that he betrayed a man who had been his teacher, and ended up killing himself.

We can stand before God only if we know our wrongdoings based on the Word of God and repent from our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit; if, contrary to this, we judge our deeds only according to our own standard, then we will not only lose our life, but we will also enter into the everlasting fire of hell.

When we do something wrong, we often tend to think of it on our own, “Oh, so I made a mistake,” but our own standard of good and evil is too ambiguous. Depending on our point of view, our deeds can be assessed differently.

Many times, what appears virtuous in the eyes of the flesh is exposed to be very wicked from the spiritual point of view. So when Judas repented before God, he only repented in his conscience, not by believing in the Word of God. Clearly, Jesus Christ was God Himself and the Savior of us mankind. The very fact that Judas did not believe in this Savior was his greatest mistake. Since Judas did not believe in Jesus Christ as God, he was bound to betray Him, and this was his wrongdoing, but Judas did not realize this. In other words, Judas did not admit his wrongdoing based on the Word of God. Instead, he only admitted his wrongdoing in his conscience, and so simply thinking that he was bound to hell for sure, he ended up killing himself. That is why Jesus Christ lamented over Judas, saying that it would have been better for him if he had never been born (Mark 14:21).

All of us should realize that it is through His



Word that God speaks to us and works in our lives. And we must all realize that through this Word of Truth, God has shone the light of salvation on us, who had been confused, void, and in the depth of sin. As God illuminates us with His light, it is through this light of Truth that we can finally realize how our hearts are empty and confused, and how we are in the depth of sin. That is because God has shone the light of salvation on all of us. Had God not shone this light, it would have been impossible for us to realize anything at all, not knowing that we were confused, nor grasping that we were void and in darkness.

To such people like us, God has illuminated the light of salvation, and He has separated the light from the darkness. We must know about this light. It is simply indispensable for us to receive the remission of our sins and to follow the light. When we are working on something,

depending on whether we look at it from the viewpoint of the Word of God or just based on our own carnal thought, the same thing can be seen very differently. Even when we look at the same object, what we see through the Word of God, the light, and just through our own eyes of the flesh can be completely different.

So it is extremely important to follow the light. Our hearts and thoughts must cherish this light and love it, and we should always live according to this light and see everything from its point of view. This is indispensable, and we must all live according to the light in this way.

In the Gospel of John, Jesus said, *“I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life”* (John 8:12). There is no darkness whatsoever in God, and there only exists the light. By accepting the God-given light of salvation, we have become righteous people. Whether we are actually saved



or not, and whether we remain as sinners or become righteous, all depend entirely on whether or not we have this light of Truth.

So our salvation requires us to have this light, but what about afterwards? How should we live after being saved? We must follow the light of Truth. When you are spreading the gospel, you are just illuminating others with the God-given light of Truth, just as it is written, *“Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light.”* You are following the light and shining the light. We are not the maker of this light, but all that we do is just accept this light into our hearts and illuminate it to others. That’s because preaching this gospel is to shine the light. For us to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit is to spread the light itself. Souls will then hear the Word of light preached by us and be transformed.

If we do not shine the light to those who are

still in darkness, then everything is useless, no matter how well we might have taught them and how well we might have plowed the fields of their hearts. All our efforts turn out to be useless. To shine the true light is what all of us must do as Jesus Christ’s witnesses and saints. Our lives will become brighter if only we make up our minds, saying, “Our lives of faith are ones that follow the light. We follow the light, the light of God. To bear witness is to shine the light. I shine the light. There are many things in this world, but in God, there is no darkness, only the light.”

We have this light with us. There exist both light and darkness in this world, but it is the light that we follow. As God said, “Let there be light,” He gave us the light of Truth. When we are preaching the gospel, we are shining this light, and when we carry on with our everyday life, we are also following this light.

Through the gospel of the water and the Spirit



that God has given us—that is, through the Truth of God—we have been saved, and we have become light. Now, we believe that we are light, we preach the light, and we live our lives following this light. We want to live the kind of life that is lived according to the light, and that spreads this light, not the things of the flesh on this earth. It is for this purpose that God has called us. What we must never forget in our lives is to follow this light. But this does not mean that we are to live in carnal perfection.

The light is Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ alone is the light, and He has illuminated our hearts with this light. And we have accepted this light. So we have become day. That we have become light does not mean that we can live perfectly in the flesh. Rather, it means that we have received the remission of sin in the providence of the grace of God. All of us must know clearly what is the light.

As we carry on with our lives, we often forget about the gospel light too easily. The gospel of the water and the Spirit is the light, but we actually end up forgetting this. Once we find something we have lost, we are prone to soon forget about the person who found and returned it to us. Like this, our minds end up forgetting about the light itself. This is a serious problem.

We have the light. This light is Jesus Christ. This light is also the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When there is light, people's basic instinct is to follow the light. They want to serve the light. It is good for our hearts to have the light, and it is good for our minds to remember that God is the light. To preach the gospel is to spread the light. It is not when we make something on our own, but when we preach the gospel received from the Lord, that we are spreading the light. We may do many different things, but all these things are actually done to spread the light. It is



to follow the light that we are living our lives of faith, and it is in this light that we do everything and live all our lives.

In the First Epistle of John, God speaks about the light frequently. It is written, *“He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes” (1 John 2:9-11).*

We are living by the grace of God. To preach the gospel and to do God’s work are indeed to live the life that spreads the light. Instead of thinking about this life too complicatedly, you should just realize simply, clearly, and correctly that to believe in Jesus Christ and preach His gospel Truth of salvation is to live the life that spreads the light. All that you have to do is just

keep in mind that to believe in and preach Jesus Christ as the light is what the life of light is all about.

Unless you keep this in mind, you can hardly realize what you are living for. The reason why I am saying this is because those who have received the remission of their sins just recently have too many things on their mind. When they are told to become God’s servants and work, they get overwhelmed by all kinds of hesitation. Why is this the case? It’s because they have forgotten about the Word of God. Even the very fact that we have been saved through the gospel of the water and the Spirit is something that has already been attained, and so it is quite possible for us to forget about its preciousness.

That is why we must regularly affirm the fact that we have become light. We need to once again ruminate on the Word, reflecting, “God is the light. God commanded there to be light. As



God said so, there was light. And God separated the light from the darkness. He called the light day, and the darkness night. God shone the light on the earth that was formless, void, and in the depth of darkness. As God shed His light on this earth, I came to be born again, and to realize my confusion, my void, and the depth of my darkness.”

Whether a soul becomes righteous or remains sinful is a simple result that is determined by the light of God. When God illuminates us with the light of salvation—that is, the gospel of the water and the Spirit—those who accept this light of salvation are to become righteous people, and those who do not accept this light into their hearts are to remain as sinners. When the sun comes up in the morning, its light illuminates the whole world. No one can escape and hide from its warmth (Psalm 19:6).

In other words, no place is too far away from

the true light to receive it. Everything is illuminated, and everything reflects back this light and also shines.

Just as the moon shines by reflecting the light from the sun, we who have become holy by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit also look toward the light and reflect this light everyday. While Jesus Christ said, “I am the light of the world,” we ourselves cannot say that we are the light of the world. There is nothing in our flesh to love or be proud of, and we really are nobody. It is simply impossible to shine the light with our own flesh. As the Bible says, “*To be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace*” (Romans 8:6), in our everyday life, the light and the darkness still coexist.

When those of us who have received the remission of our sins know that we have the light, and when we focus on this light and march





forth following this light, we can always live an upright life. It is such a joy to think about this, that we truly have the light. Whenever our hearts are darkened, and whenever we get confused and don't know what to do, we can decide what is right in no time at all if we just look at the light. It is by the light that we can discern what we should do and how we should live. Because we are only too human, we often fall into confusion, we often feel empty, and darkness is often on the face of the deep. Even so, however, we can still continue to follow the light in times like these, for we have the light.

I am so thankful that we have the light, that this light is in our hearts, and that this light is in the whole universe. I am truly grateful for the fact that there is a God who gave us the light. No matter what circumstances we might face, and no matter what insufficiencies might be revealed in us, because we have the light, we can still follow

it. Words cannot express how thankful I am for this. If this light were not there, only hopelessness would await us.

There is a huge difference between someone who has the light and someone who does not. Those who have the light may be darkened for a short while, but because they have the light, they can get hold of the rudder once again, follow the guidance of the light, set the direction for their lives, and go forth following the light.

In contrast, it is fundamentally impossible for those who have no light, those who have not accepted this light, to live the life of light no matter how much they might desire this. This makes a huge difference. In terms of the flesh itself, there is little difference between those who have accepted the light and those who have not. Viewed in carnal terms, nor are their thoughts so different from each other. Any difference between the two is only paper-thin, and there



really is no big difference of which to speak. When someone who is not born again goes to the washroom, I go to the washroom also, and when he eats, I eat too.

The only difference is whether one has accepted Jesus Christ by faith or not; apart from this, there is no other difference. This may seem like a small difference, but it is actually a huge difference. Because we have Jesus Christ, we live in His grace, and because we believe in Jesus Christ, we really can do God's work at all times.

Those who have been born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit may be completely insufficient, but they can still look toward the light and follow it always; in contrast, those who have not accepted the light cannot live virtuously, no matter how much they might desire to do this. I see this happening all too often around me. Even the so-called servants of

God actually have no light in them, and so they are incapable of teaching anything. Many of them cannot even teach the congregation when the rapture shall come, whether it would be before, after, or in the middle of the great tribulation, precisely because they themselves do not know this.

If they know that Jesus Christ is the light and have accepted this light, why are they still in darkness? Why are they still dark? When the gospel and the light are there, how can they not know this? The Lord clearly said that He will come back when the trumpet is blown at the end, but when will this last trumpet sound? Is it before the great tribulation? Absolutely not! Then is it after the great tribulation? No way! Neither view is correct, for our Lord said that the rapture will come after the great tribulation begins but before it ends, before the wrath of the seven bowls are poured, and many saints will be martyred at that



time. All that we have to do is just believe accordingly. Would someone who really has the light fail to discern this?

Nowadays, it seems as if the churches in Korea are competing against each other to build a bigger church building. Five of the ten largest churches in the world are said to be located in Korea. Some pastors of these churches make their congregation donate construction funds by taking out loans and mortgaging their houses. Would such a conduct be appropriate to the kind of life that is led by those who have received the light? I bet that they are not the receivers of the true light.

Those who have accepted the light walk in grace. As God has saved us, it is in His grace that we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by God, and it is according to how much God has empowered us that we do everything. That is why the Apostle Paul confessed, “*I can*

*do all things through Christ who strengthens me” (Philippians 4:13).*

Some people say that they are studying the Bible in their homes on their own to minister as a pastor later on. But to minister as a pastor, one must first learn about the gospel of the water and the Spirit and believe in it. He must first accept the light. And only when he himself becomes light can he shine the light on others sitting in darkness.

By believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have come to dwell in God’s grace. It is because we have accepted the gift of salvation through God’s gospel of the water and the Spirit that we are shinning the light that God has illuminated us. In the Lord, I reflect quietly on what kind of grace God has given us. God has entrusted us with His work, and we do this work by faith, within the bounds of the strength that He gives us. Since we follow the Lord by



believing so, we are always at peace.

If someone does not accept his salvation, then nor can we impose it on him by force. Are we God? No, of course not; we only believe that God is the light and follow this light. Whenever our hearts are about to fall into weaknesses and darkness, we have to look toward the light once again and follow this light as we are illuminated by it.

When you go out and bear witness, don't make this any more difficult than it really is. What we are spreading is only the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We are not spreading our own eloquence, our own gift, or our own wisdom. We are not boasting of anything else, but we are spreading only the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ has completed. And we are living according to the light. Whether we do something well or not is not what is important, but what is important is to live for

the Lord and follow Him.

We have already accepted the light, and we have already become the ones who are spreading this light. There must be such a belief in our hearts. This faith itself enables us to always spread the gospel, do the work of righteousness, look toward the light, and live according to the light. We can then live upright at all times and never stumble.

Above all else, I give my thanks to God for giving us the light of salvation. Even if we have nothing else but only the light of salvation, we can still always live our lives in the Lord. Because there is nothing good in us, we need the light, and all that we have to do is just believe in this light of salvation and live our lives in this grace, spreading the true gospel to everyone. As we believe in the light of salvation, it has now been made possible for us to always live the life of light before God. ☒



## **From the Power of Darkness into the Kingdom of the Son**

**<Genesis 1:2-5>**

**“The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the evening and the morning were the first day.”**

## **When You Believe in the Gospel Truth of the Water and the Spirit, Your Confusion of Mind Will Disappear**

If you and I have committed even the smallest of all sins, we must be condemned for this sin and die before God. That is the Law of God. However, to avoid condemning us like this, God sent His only begotten Son Jesus Christ to this earth, and had Him receive baptism from John the Baptist. So, by passing all the sins of mankind onto His Son, and by crucifying Him to the Cross, God had His Son die vicariously for everyone. And God resurrected Him from the dead. All these things were done so that everyone would be saved by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



Jesus said, “*I am the way, the truth, and the life*” (John 14:6). If this is the case, then the gospel of the water and the Spirit of which our Lord spoke must be true.

Do you think that whenever you and I commit sin against God, this sin would be forgiven if we just confess it? Where is it written in the Bible that we are washed from our sins whenever we offer the prayers of confession?

Many people point out 1 John 1:9 as the basis for the doctrine of repentance. Since 1 John 1:9 says, “*If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness,*” almost all Christians believe that they are washed from their sins whenever they confess them. Such an interpretation, however, is a great fallacy.

The actual meaning of this passage is that although we are constantly sinning at the present, our Lord already blotted out all the sins of this

world through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Why is it that they only know the first clause of 1 John 1:9, and ignore the remaining clauses that follow in the same passage? What does it mean when it says here that God is “faithful and just”? When it says here that God is “faithful and just,” it means that over 2,000 years ago, by being baptized by John the Baptist, Jesus Christ already took away all our sins of the past, the future, and the present, and washed them all away truthfully and faithfully, for He knew that you and I would sin. That is why the Bible says that if we confess our sins, God is faithful and just to forgive us. In other words, while we continue to sin and confess our sins at the present, our Lord already took care of everything in the past, as He took away all our sins and blotted them all out long ago.

Therefore, as we carry on with our lives on this earth as someone who has already been born



again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, whenever we commit sin, we must make the right confession as the following, placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit: “Father, I have committed this sin. I really cannot help but sin. But I believe that You have already blotted out even this sin by being baptized by John the Baptist. All my sins that are committed now, these sins were also blotted out long ago when You were baptized and crucified. You have cleansed away and blotted out all my sins of the world, not just my past sins, but my present and future sins as well, all with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I can only give You all my thanks, for You have saved me wholly as I have accepted the gospel of the water and the Spirit, when I had been bound to hell. Lord, please keep the heart of this righteous man, so that I may live as a servant of righteousness, and lead me so that I may not fall into evil.”

## **For Us to Be Freed from all Our Sins and Confusion, We Must Know the Truth of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit and Believe in It**

For us, Jesus Christ is the true light of salvation. Jesus Christ is the faithful Savior to us, and He has actually blotted out all our sins through His water and blood. When did He blot out our sins? He blotted them out long ago. Some of you, whenever you now commit sin, may still be saying, “I am so sorry, Lord; please forgive this sin of mine.” But you are making such a confession only because you still have not received the perfect remission of your sins. While you are crying out to God with this confession of conscience, the truth of the matter is that the Lord has already blotted out all of your



sins once and for all with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

If the Lord were to forgive our sins everyday in the present tense, as we give our prayers of repentance, then the Lord would still not be able to sit on the right hand of God. He would have to be baptized everyday and be crucified to death everyday, even as we speak now. If you still believe that your sins are forgiven everyday, then your faith is still mired in spiritual confusion.

Jesus Christ came to this earth as the light of salvation to save us from the quagmire of sin, and He has indeed become our true Savior by coming to us by the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That is why Jesus Christ was baptized by John the Baptist, carried the sins of the world to the Cross, and was crucified. And He died on the Cross, saying, “It is finished,” and rose from the dead again. Just as Hebrews 10:18 says, “*Now where there is remission of these, there is no*

*longer an offering for sin*”, by sacrificing His own body as an eternal offering, He has saved us perfectly once for all, so that there would be no more offering for sin. Therefore, I ask all of you to believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit, and to be freed from all your confusion. It is by knowing and believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that we can receive the remission of our sins, become righteous people, and be born again. I admonish you all to now be freed from confusion, and to also deliver countless people from confusion.

## **The Old Testament Also Declares Mankind to Be Piles of Sin**

In Isaiah 59:1-8, God speaks about mankind’s sin, saying that everyone commits sin with his





hands, feet, lips and body, and is also constantly planning to commit sin. As it is written:

*“Behold, the LORD’s hand is not shortened,  
That it cannot save;  
Nor His ear heavy,  
That it cannot hear.*

*But your iniquities have separated you from  
your God;*

*And your sins have hidden His face from you,  
So that He will not hear.*

*For your hands are defiled with blood,  
And your fingers with iniquity;*

*Your lips have spoken lies,  
Your tongue has muttered perversity.*

*No one calls for justice,  
Nor does any plead for truth.*

*They trust in empty words and speak lies;  
They conceive evil and bring forth iniquity.*

*They hatch vipers’ eggs and weave the  
spider’s web;*

*He who eats of their eggs dies,  
And from that which is crushed a viper breaks  
out.*

*Their webs will not become garments,  
Nor will they cover themselves with their  
works;*

*Their works are works of iniquity,  
And the act of violence is in their hands.*

*Their feet run to evil,  
And they make haste to shed innocent blood;*

*Their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity;  
Wasting and destruction are in their paths.*

*The way of peace they have not known,  
And there is no justice in their ways;*

*They have made themselves crooked paths;*

*Whoever takes that way shall not know  
peace.”*

Isaiah 59:1-2 state, *“Behold, the LORD’s hand  
is not shortened, That it cannot save; Nor His  
ear heavy, That it cannot hear. But your*



*iniquities have separated you from your God; And your sins have hidden His face from you, So that He will not hear.”*

It says here that the only reason why people cannot commune with God is because of their sins. It is because of our sins that our prayers cannot reach God, and God can neither bless us nor allow us to enter the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. In other words, because our sins are blocking us from God, God cannot help us even as He wants to help us.

God wants to answer the prayers of those who suffer and are oppressed in this world and help them, but because people are sinful, He cannot help them. If there is still sin in your hearts, then no matter how devotedly you might pray, God cannot hear your prayers. That is why God is telling us to receive the remission of our sins by believing in Jesus Christ, who came by the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Let us now see from the Word what kind of sin you commit throughout your entire lifetime. When it says here in Isaiah 59:3, “For your hands are defiled with blood, And your fingers with iniquity,” it means that we commit sin with our hands. And when it says, “*For your hands are defiled with blood, And your fingers with iniquity; Your lips have spoken lies, Your tongue has muttered perversity. No one calls for justice, Nor does any plead for truth,*” (Isaiah 59:3-4), it means that we commit all kinds of sin with our lips.

Isaiah 59:4-5 continue to say, “*They trust in empty words and speak lies; They conceive evil and bring forth iniquity. They hatch vipers’ eggs and weave the spider’s web.*” This passage shows how we commit idolatry, bowing before objects carved out of rock and wood in complete futility. It also shows just how wicked our hearts are, having murderous desires at the slightest hint

of any harm, injury, or insult, which are precisely the kind of heart that hatches vipers' eggs.

Is human nature fundamentally good or evil? Countless philosophers and thinkers in both the East and the West have expounded on their own arguments, some claiming that human nature is good, while others asserting that it is evil.

However, Jesus, the Lord of Truth, described the sinful hearts of human beings as the following in Mark 7:21-23: "For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil things come from within and defile a man." The Word of the Scriptures is the truth.

Everyone is born with sin, and everyone lives his entire lifetime committing sin. There is no other species in this world that is as nefarious as mankind. A while ago, a movie titled Maruta was

shown in Korea. This movie tells the story of Japanese atrocities committed in China during World War II, when a Japanese military unit conducted numerous experiments on living bodies for chemical and biological weapons. In this movie, the Japanese military performed various experiments on Chinese and Korean people, testing to see how long human life would last under different freezing temperatures, putting living human bodies into a centrifuge to see how long it would take for them to be drained of bodily fluids and die, and injecting them with bubonic plague bacteria to test how long it would take for them to die. Like this, the human heart is nefarious beyond description. We can see just how cruel and atrocious human beings can be under certain circumstances, so evil that they are capable of turning their fellow, living human beings into objects of experiment.



All this is the evidence of the fact that everyone has a wicked heart that is completely selfish.

Competition and conflict are two features that we can frequently witness in our human society. There are many cruel people who, after using each other to their own ends, do not flinch to kill the others once the plan is completed. The extremely selfish heart that puts one's own survival above all, and that is willing to sacrifice others for this end, is a result that ultimately stems from the wickedness of the human heart.

Just how many sins do human beings commit? We commit countless sins with our hands, lips, and acts. This is our reality from which we cannot escape, having been born with sin. In the movie *Schindler's List*, Schindler said, "Whenever circumstances allow, the wickedness that is in people's hearts pour out." Like this, because human beings were born into this world with such wicked iniquities by nature, they all

commit sin as soon as circumstances are ripe to pour out their iniquities.

However, some people try to hide all the sins they commit throughout their entire lifetime with their religious lives. They try to temporarily cover up their exposed sins with such things as sacrifice, volunteer work, ascetic lifestyle, prayers, and evangelizing efforts. In Korea also, there are many people who have dedicated their entire lifetime in sacrifice, so much so that they are called living saints. They may heal the sick, share their material possessions with others, provide hospice services, and through all these things bring benefits to the carnal lives of the marginalized, but they cannot deliver these people from sin and turn them into the righteous. This is because God does not look at one's outside appearance, but he looks at the center of his heart. In other words, when God looks at the center of people's hearts, He sees they are filled



with poisonous sins and practiced wickedness. God doesn't need a microscope to see this, for He is the One who made us, and so He knows all about us.

My fellow believers, do you realize just how hardened everyone's heart is? It is human nature for everyone to despise all those who are weaker. When we look at those who are universally recognized by all for their virtues, or when we look at the advanced, highly democratic countries, we can see that their behaviors are actually more violent. In the old days, the great powers used to invade and plunder weak and small countries without hesitation.

For example, when Great Britain turned Hong Kong into its colony, did it not undermine China with opium? Everyone acts extremely callously for his own benefit. This is the true picture of all human beings.

Human beings are so violent that they are willing to invade another country and take the land as theirs, even if it requires them to kill off other human beings. This is who human beings are by nature. The very human race itself is such an evil species. That is why the Bible describes human beings as "*a brood of evildoers*" (*Isaiah 1:4*), declared to be sinners. *Isaiah 59:7* also declares, "*Their feet run to evil, And they make haste to shed innocent blood; Their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; Wasting and destruction are in their paths,*" and glaringly points out the sinful nature of mankind. Everyone is like this thought and deed.

Just as Jesus Christ said, what proceeds "from within, out of the heart of men," is only "evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness." My fellow believers, count each of these sins with



your hands, and ask yourselves whether such wicked things are indeed in your hearts or not. If you are honest before God, then you will admit that your hearts do harbor all these iniquities.

Yet despite this, even though all human beings have such sins in their hearts, they do not know their own sins. To these people, God said, “Darkness was on the face of the deep.” In other words, even though there are all kinds of sin in their hearts, people do not realize who they really are. And countless people are deluded to think that they are not so wicked. For us to receive the remission of our sins, we must first realize our true selves, but the problem is that we do not realize this. If one has no awareness of himself, that he is bound to hell because he is too evil, then such people cannot avoid but turning into mere hypocritical religionists. Many Pharisees failed to receive the grace of salvation precisely

because they did not realize their true selves and refused to acknowledge this.

That is why God had to illuminate our hearts with the light of Truth. In other words, we can realize the need to receive the remission of our sins only if God teaches us what kind of sin we have, and what kind of sin we commit. It is for this reason that God wrote about the sins of mankind in the Bible. In fact, while the Bible is the book of salvation that enables us to be saved from sin by believing in this Word, it is, on the other hand, also a mirror that enables us to see ourselves.

In this Word of the Scriptures, Jesus Christ said that from within, out of the human heart, proceed evil thoughts above all. There are evil thoughts in our hearts, in other words. Do you have wicked thoughts or not? Of course you do. Do you have perverted desires or not? Of course you do. Do you have greedy desires to steal or



not? Of course you do. Do you have murderous desires or not? Of course you do. Do you have adulterous desire or not? Of course you do. Aren't your hearts greedy? Of course they are. Aren't your hearts wicked, deceitful, and lewd? Of course they are. Do you have an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, and foolishness in your hearts? Of course you do. All these sinful desires are firmly lodged in your hearts and in my heart, in the heart of everyone living on this earth, men and women, young and old, and rich and poor alike.

However, not everyone knows that there are such sins in his heart. Before God shines salvation to people with the light of Truth, there is no way for them to even realize the true identity of themselves. Before we come to know the Word of the Scriptures, we think that we are just slightly flawed. We say, "I've never committed any great sin. I've never stolen

anything from anyone. I really haven't committed any major transgressions, and I've lived quite virtuously."

However, God says to us, "You are murderers, thieves, adulterous people, of those who have committed such sins as covetousness, wickedness, lewdness, jealousy, discord, pride, and foolishness." People then say, "When did I commit murder? Whom did I kill? I've never actually killed anyone. And how am I so lewd? Those who visit brothels who are lewd, not me. I've never been to any such place, and so how can You say that I am lewd? How can You offend me like that?"

People not only fail to realize their actual sins, but they are also completely oblivious to their really wicked identity. They do not know where they came from and where they are heading; what they are living for and where they are going; and what the final destination is for those



who have received the remission of sin, and for the sinners who have not received God's grace.

It is when one knows the God who has come by the gospel love of the water and the Spirit that he can finally realize his sins clearly. The Bible says that the fear of Jehovah is the foundation of wisdom. In other words, it is someone who truly fears God that can come to know himself, realize where he is heading, know his sins, and even grasp all God's plans for the entire universe. This actually applies to you and me all alike. Even though God said to us humans that we all have evil thoughts, we are deluded to think, "What evil thoughts do I have? I've never had any evil thoughts!"

We cannot but admit our sinfulness because the Word of God says so. It is because the Word of God is true that we are forced to admit ourselves as sinful beings before the Word. If one does not admit the authenticity of the Bible,

he would not admit that he has such evil things as pointed out in Mark 7:21-23.

For a closer example, if you meet convicted criminals on death row or imprisoned for life, they will most likely claim that they only made a small mistake forced upon them by their circumstances, and that they are not really guilty. So most criminals protest their innocence, claiming that they were imprisoned out of sheer bad luck.

Like this, human beings are so utterly ignorant of their own sins. Before we received the remission of our sins, you and I alike were completely oblivious to the fact that we were such an evil seed. As for myself, I had done many crazy things in the past, but I did not realize that there was an insane mind in me. In other words, deep in my heart there were such sins, but my outside appearance did not reflect them. Once in a while, I would make some crazy





decision and do something insane, but afterwards I would blame the circumstances, torture myself and agonize over what I did.

And then in my heart I would try to comfort myself. I committed such evil deeds whenever my fundamentally sinful desires sprang forth. Yet despite this, even though I actually behaved like this, and even though I beat someone almost to death, I never really thought of myself as a murderer. I thought, “When did I ever stab anyone to death?” So since I never literally killed anyone, I constantly justified myself, and I considered myself a decent person.

Before I knew the Word of the Scriptures, I thought of myself to be a decent man, someone who was far removed from “sin.” I, too, was completely ignorant of myself. You probably were like me as well. When I was young, I thought all the teenage girls were angels. And whenever I saw nuns or nurses in white gowns, I

also thought they were all angels. However, once I reached puberty, I began to have lewd thoughts whenever I saw attractive women, being as a flame burning inside with immoral desires. So I fell into despair, convinced that someone so filthy like me should disappear from the face of the earth. When I passed through puberty and became more mature, I finally realized that people are all hypocrites, and that everyone is pretty much the same. Everyone, in other words, is completely ignorant of himself, wasting away his life in vain.

It is because God saw our heart’s desire to steal that He told us, “You are thieves,” even before we actually stole anything. He is saying, “You are murders, you are arrogant, and you are insane.” As a matter of fact, is there anyone who does not covet another person’s belongings? No, there is none. At issue here is not whether one actually steals something or not, but the fact that



because everyone fundamentally has a sinful heart, he would put his desires into action whenever circumstances allowed.

When we plant flowers, we don't plant them right away on the ground, but we first plant the seeds, water them, and have them sprout and then blossom. Likewise, it is because we have seeds of sin in our hearts that we commit sinful deeds. Put differently, in our hearts there are twelve seeds of sin, and so one seed would sprout today and another would sprout tomorrow. Whenever circumstances allow, these twelve seeds continue to sprout, grow, and blossom in our hearts. In other words we put them into action. That darkness was on the face of the deep means that there are sins hidden deep inside people's hearts that they are not aware of by themselves.

Darkness implies sin. It means there are sins in people's hearts. That is what God is saying.

Can you admit this, my fellow believers? We may not have actually committed such sins with our action, but God still tells us that we have these sins. Do you acknowledge this fact? The reality is that everyone is like this. For example, do you think that Mother Teresa, someone who was counted as a famous saint of this age, was not like this? Although she sought to help others, would her heart have been completely free of any immoral, murderous, adulterous, and covetous desires? If she really was completely free of such sinful desires, then either Jesus Christ must have lied, or Mother Teresa was not a "human being." However, since even Mother Teresa was all too human, and since the Word of Jesus Christ is the absolute Truth that has not one jot or one tittle that is false, she could never have been so perfect.

Just how many massacres were committed in the history of Christianity, with countless people



murdered just for opposing the proclaimed religious orthodoxy of the day? Christians slaughtered innumerable people during the Medieval Age. Why did this happen? It is because they had murderous desires in their hearts that they killed so many people so recklessly for resisting their religious authority.

In fact, the domain of all religions is unclean. The legalistic life of every religionist, which is not of a born-again saint, is like foul and rotting fish. Like this, even within Christianity, if someone is not born again of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then God will say clearly, even if this person has shown true devotion to others, “You are a pile of sin and a sinner. So unless you believe in Jesus Christ, accept the light, and receive the remission of your sins, you will be cast into hell. Regardless of whether you are a pastor, an elder, or a deacon, unless you are

born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you will be thrown into hell.”

One must therefore surrender to the Word of God. Yet despite this, those who are ignorant of the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit are walking on a wrong path. In other words, they are trying to be washed clean from their sins and reach Heaven through their own religious lives, by trying to reach transcendence with their own acts and discipline their bodies. However, to those who do not know their sinful selves, the Lord is saying, *“The way of peace they have not known, And there is no justice in their ways; They have made themselves crooked paths; Whoever takes that way shall not know peace”* (Isaiah 59:8).

The Bible makes it clear, saying, *“There is a way that seems right to a man, But its end is the way of death”* (Proverbs 16:25). Many people believe, “If I live virtuously, then I should be



able to enter Heaven,” and so they live their religious lives according to their own vague thoughts. However, God says that such people will all perish without exception. No matter how convinced these people might be by their own thoughts, believing that they would all go to Heaven some day if they are good to others and diligent with their acts, their end will be nothing else but their own destruction. Yet they think like this precisely because they do not know the way of peace. Their fallacy stems from their ignorance of this God-given blessing that enables them to be born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

## **As the Legalists Do Not Know the Way of Peace, They Are Leading People to Confusion**

Many Christians today have paintings of Jesus Christ and the Cross put up in their living rooms, and they think that they will all go to Heaven if they just believe in Jesus Christ in whatever way they see fit. However, such people believe in Jesus Christ without knowing the way of peace. To go to Heaven, anyone whose heart has sin before God must first receive the remission of sin without fail.

When our Lord said, “The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep,” He was saying that people do not realize their own sins, even though they have so many. However, through the passage in Mark 7:21 and on, we came to realize that we harbor



twelve sins in our hearts, and that we are all bound to put these sins into action and continue to commit them throughout our entire lifetime.

Each and every one of us cannot help but sin with our flesh. We really have no choice in this matter. No matter how good and virtuous one might be, this person still commits sin, for there is indeed sin in his heart.

We all commit sin before God. Even if you have not committed sin with your acts, or according to your own standard, you are still sinning with your hearts constantly. I am not saying here that you have committed a particular sin with a certain act or deed, but what I am saying is that by nature, you and I alike have such sins harbored in our hearts, and whenever circumstances are right, we all commit them with our thoughts, words, and acts. Through the written Word of God, we have now come to realize just how we all are great sinners. When

the Bible says, “Darkness was on the face of the deep,” this implies that from the day we were born to the day we die, we have committed and will continue to commit such sins until we stand before God. My fellow believers, do you acknowledge this Word with your hearts?

Let us now turn to John 8:1-11.

“But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. Now early in the morning He came again into the temple, and all the people came to Him; and He sat down and taught them. Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, ‘Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?’ This they said, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as



though He did not hear. So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, ‘He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.’ And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground. Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, ‘Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?’ She said, ‘No one, Lord.’ And Jesus said to her, ‘Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.’”

Here in John 8:11, Jesus said to the woman who was caught in adultery right on the spot, *“Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.”* This woman here was caught for committing adultery with a man. This

transgression broke one of the Ten Commandments, and the Law required that such a person should be stoned to death if there were just witnesses. Then, how could the Lord say to the woman, caught in the very act of her sin, “Neither do I condemn you”?

This woman had been caught by the Pharisees and scribes. The scribes were officials of the court. In other words, they were government officials. The Pharisees, on the other hand, were the religious leaders of the time, and they were teachers of the Law. Since the woman broke the Law, believed by both these two groups of people, there was no way for her to escape from her condemnation but die. Having caught the woman in adultery in the very act, they dragged her like a dog and dumped her at the feet of Jesus Christ. At that time, the scribes and Pharisees were trying to provoke Jesus Christ, who was a



thorn in their eyes, so that they could kill Him along with the woman.

They pressed Jesus Christ, saying, “Moses’ Law commands us to stone to death such a woman who is caught in adultery, but what will You do with this woman?” They were trying to test Jesus Christ with the Law, since He had constantly expounded on love. At that time, Jesus Christ first began to write on the ground with His finger, and then said to them, “He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.”

Now, the woman was someone who could not avoid but be executed according to the Law at the time. However, the Bible writes that when Jesus Christ told them that those who are without sin should stone her, hearing this, the crowd, “being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last.” So, many people who had condemned the

woman fled at a single utterance of Jesus Christ. Everyone is like this before God.

## **Now the Righteousness of God Apart from the Law Is Revealed**

My fellow believers, who in this world can ever keep the Law to perfection? The Law refers to the entirety of the 613 commandments that God gave to the people of Israel, setting out what they should and should not do. Broadly speaking, the Law has ten major commandments, as well as other commandments that must be kept in everyday life. What we must realize here clearly, however, is that there cannot be anyone on this earth who can keep all the Law of God. According to the statutes of the Law of God, Jesus Christ had to kill both the adulterous woman and her accusers alike, but when viewed



from the law of love, He had to save the woman. Of course, Jesus Christ spoke as the true Savior that He was, and with His Word saved the woman and drove away her accusers. When they heard Jesus Christ saying to them, “He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first,” they were all convicted of their conscience, from the old to the young, and they all departed from there.

When we stand before the Law of God, who among us can really stand with our heads high without any shame? God knows perfectly well that we are incapable of keeping all the Law. That is precisely why He made His Law and gave it to us, so that He may save us. Jesus Christ said to the woman, “Neither do I condemn you.” By this, He meant, “Neither can I say that you have sin.” He said, “I do not judge you, either. Stand up, woman; go and do not commit such a sin again.”

How could our Lord say this? Given the fact that the woman was clearly caught in adultery right on the spot, and she actually sinned, does this then mean that her sin was covered up unconditionally out of love? As we know, God is not such an unjust God. How, then, could Jesus Christ say that?

That is because Jesus Christ had already accepted all the sins of mankind once and for all, including this woman’s sin, through the baptism that He received in the Jordan River from John the Baptist, the representative of mankind. Because our Lord, by being baptized by John the Baptist in the Jordan River, had taken upon not only this woman’s sin, but also all our sins and all the sins that people committed in the past and will ever commit in the future, He could say to the woman that she was without sin. In other words, it is because Jesus Christ had already taken upon the sins of the world by being





baptized that the Lord could say to the woman that He did not “condemn” her.

Exactly how, then, did Jesus Christ take upon this woman’s sin? To answer, let us turn to Matthew 3:13-17.

*“Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. And John tried to prevent Him, saying, ‘I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?’ But Jesus answered and said to him, ‘Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.’ Then he allowed Him. When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, ‘This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.’”*

Here, we see Jesus Christ being baptized by a man named John the Baptist. But at first, John the Baptist refused to baptize Jesus Christ. He was saying, “No way! How can I baptize You, the Son of God, when I should be baptized by You?”

However, we can see Jesus Christ commanding John the Baptist, saying, “*Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.*” By this, Jesus Christ was saying that to blot out everyone’s sins, it was fitting for Him to be baptized. So Jesus Christ was baptized by John the Baptist. John the Baptist baptized Jesus Christ, putting his hands on His head, submerging Him in the water, and then raising Him up out of the water. And once Jesus Christ received this baptism, the gates of Heaven were opened up, and God the Father said, “This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”



The phrase “all righteousness” means that Jesus Christ would take upon all the sins of the world, so that He may make everyone sinless and take all to Heaven. What, then, did Jesus Christ have to do to fulfill this righteous work that would make us sinless? He had to be baptized by John the Baptist. The baptism that Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist means “to be washed, to be buried, to be passed on, or to be transferred.” So because Jesus Christ took upon all the sins of this world once and for all through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, He could carry them to the Cross, be crucified to death, and rise from the dead again.

Jesus Christ is the Son of God. He is the Creator who made the whole universe and everything in it. He is the Savior who has saved you and me from our sins. This Jesus Christ met a woman who was caught in adultery on the spot. However, Jesus Christ had already taken upon

this woman’s sin beforehand like this, for He already knew that she would commit sin while living in the world, that she would commit adultery.

## **Jesus’ Everlasting Sacrifice Revealed in Leviticus**

Chapter 16 in Leviticus spells out regulations on the “Day of Atonement” when Aaron helped the people of Israel to be remitted from their yearly sins.

It is written in Leviticus 16:21-22, “*Aaron shall lay both his hands on the head of the live goat, confess over it all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions, concerning all their sins, putting them on the head of the goat, and shall send it away into the wilderness by the hand of a suitable man. The*



*goat shall bear on itself all their iniquities to an uninhabited land; and he shall release the goat in the wilderness.”*

Aaron the High Priest is mentioned here in the passage. Of all the priests offering sacrifices to God in the Tabernacle on behalf of the people of Israel, he was the most senior priest. On the 10th day of the seventh month, this representative priest brought two goats for the people of Israel, cast the lots, took the goat that was first selected into the Tabernacle, and passed all the sins of the Israelites by laying his hands on its head.

Then, he listed all the sins of Israelites, saying, “God! The people of Israel have committed every sin. They have murdered, committed adultery, stolen, worshiped idols, bore false testimony, coveted, and blasphemed.” And when he took off his hands that he had put on the goat in his prayer, these sins were all passed onto the goat. The laying on of hands means, spiritually

speaking, “to be passed on.” And it also means “to bury.”

Aaron cut this goat’s throat, drew its blood, and sprinkled this blood, thereby performing the ritual that cleansed the mercy seat, the Tabernacle, and the altar of burnt offering. As Aaron gave such a sacrifice in the Tabernacle, the House of God, God washed away His people’s sins, seeing the sacrificial animal, the passing of sins through the laying of hands on this animal, and its blood of vicarious condemnation. In short, this was God’s just method of salvation.

## **Jesus Fulfilled All the Righteousness of God**

God cannot just tolerate anyone’s sins. Just as the Bible says, “*The wages of sin is death*”



(*Romans 6:23*), sin must be condemned to death without fail. That is God's justice. However, God is also the God of love, and so to meet the two conditions of His love and His justice, He made the people of Israel pass all their sins to an unblemished sacrificial animal, such as a goat or a sheep, by laying their hands on its head. When the people of Israel killed this animal in their place, put its blood on the horns of the altar of burnt offering, and sprinkled it on the mercy seat, redemption was achieved justly as God saw the blood of this animal—that is, it was proper before God's just law of salvation—and that is why God bestowed the remission of sin to them. It was because God loved mankind that He gave it such a just sacrificial system of salvation.

Aaron then took the remaining goat before his people and laid his hands on its head. As *Leviticus 16:21* says, "Aaron shall lay both his hands on the head of the live goat, confess over it

all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions, concerning all their sins," Aaron put his hands on the goat's head and confessed all the sins that the people of Israel had committed over a year. And after taking his hands off, Aaron entrusted the live goat to another man, who then led it far, far into the Palestine wilderness and released it there. Then this goat, shouldering all the sins of the people of Israel, wandered around in the waterless and grassless desert, and ultimately died of thirst under the scorching sun.

This was the sacrifice that was given on the "Day of Atonement," which blotted out a year's worth of sins of the people of Israel. Through this sacrificial animal and offering, God was planning to save the entire mankind from all of its sins in the future, who is in the likeness of the image of God. That is why He had this passage written.



The people of Israel offered the same sacrifice every year according to this Word. When the High Priest died, his son succeeded him once reaching 30, and this sacrifice was offered repeatedly. However, such a sacrifice was only a shadow of the good thing to come. The very fact that the people of Israel had to repeatedly offer the same sacrifice every year is evidence of the fact that through such a sacrifice, they could not receive the complete remission of their sins once and for all (Hebrews 10:1-4).

That is why God had prophesied 700 years ago that His only begotten Son Jesus Christ would be conceived in the body of a virgin and be incarnated in the flesh of man. And exactly according to this prophesied promise, God sent Jesus Christ and John the Baptist to this earth and allowed them to fulfill all righteousness. Now, as revealed in the Old Testament, to give “one sacrifice for sins forever,” the Son of God

Himself was born unto this earth incarnated in the flesh.

Like this, Jesus came as the One who will save His people from their sins, and when He turned 30, He accepted all sins by being baptized by John the Baptist, the representative of mankind. It was “*to fulfill all righteousness*” (*Matthew 3:15*) that Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist. It is I who should die, be condemned by God and cast into hell, but because God loved me, He sent His Son to this earth; passed all my sins to Him through John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, through this laying on of hands, baptism; condemned His Son by crucifying Him; and has thereby saved you and me.

So our Lord thus fulfilled all the righteousness of God, that is, by the method of receiving the laying on of hands. It was to make everyone sinless that Jesus Christ was baptized and



crucified. The word baptism also means “to be washed, to be passed on, to be buried,” and it tells us that God has saved us from the sins of the world in this way, through this most appropriate and fitting way. So according to what God had promised to us mankind here in the Old Testament, and according to the rule established by God that sin would be passed on with the laying on of hands, our Lord accepted all our sins by being baptized.

Therefore, it is by believing in this fact that we have received the remission of our sins. As Jesus Christ the Lamb of God came to this earth, as He accepted all our sins, all the sins of the world of the past, present and future, and as He was crucified to death, through all of these things He has saved us. And now, whoever believes in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, men or women, servants or the free, Jews or Gentiles alike, can receive the remission of sin without

discrimination.

My fellow believers, it is because our Lord had done this work on this earth that He said to the adulterous woman caught in the very act, “Woman, neither do I condemn you.” In other words, He was saying, “Neither can I say that you have sin, nor can I judge you. Because I accepted all your sins through My baptism, I must die in your place, I must be put to shame in your place, and I must bear all punishments in your place. I must suffer like this because your sins committed in this world were already all passed onto Me and it is I who now have them.”

That is why our Lord said in John 8:12, “*I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life.*” Those who believe in and follow the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit will become the light of life. It is written in Genesis 1:2, “*The earth was without form, and void; and darkness*



*was on the face of the deep.*” This means that there is sin deep in us. Nonetheless, the Lord has given us salvation by being baptized, shedding His blood on the Cross, and thereby bearing all the condemnation of sin and paying off all its wages.

My fellow believers, because of profound iniquities of darkness, we could not realize our own sins, we were all bound to die, we had no choice but to be cast into hell, and even if we knew our sins, we were incapable of getting these sins solved. However, thanks to Jesus Christ, such people like us have now become light, transformed from darkness. Someone who could not avoid but die for his sins has now become a righteous man. This was impossible through our own efforts, no matter how hard we tried, but by believing in our Lord, we could become righteous people. We were indeed all sinners, but the Lord came to this earth and has

saved you and me. Therefore, Jesus Christ also said to this adulterous woman in John 8, *“Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.”* And He also said, *“He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life.”* My fellow believers, sinners have now become righteous, and the condemned have now received everlasting life.

Do you want to believe in this Jesus Christ? Do you believe in this Jesus Christ as your Savior? It is because Jesus Christ took care of our sins concretely and saved us all that our Lord said, *“Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest” (Matthew 11:28).*

Apart from Jesus Christ, is there any other god on this earth that promises salvation to those who believe in him? Buddha basically left everyone to his own device. So did Confucius and Mencius, only extolling us to live virtuously and ethically.



Where can you find anyone who had so much compassion for you and me, who were all bound to hell, that he laid down his own life for us? However, Jesus Christ forsook His throne of Heaven for you and me, came down to this earth, accepted and took upon all our sins by being baptized, and paid off the wages of our sins with His own life. There is no one else but only Jesus Christ who has saved us. So this Jesus Christ is our Savior. That is why the Lord said what He said to the adulterous woman.

## **We Must Take the Faith That Enables Us to Receive the Remission of Our Sins from God**

It is written in Romans 8:1-2, *“There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are*

*in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death.”*

Here, the Apostle Paul is saying that as Jesus Christ took away all the sins of the world by being baptized and dying on the Cross, the Lord has made us sinless. My fellow believers, don't we all commit sin in this world? Of course we do. However, in John 1:29, when John the Baptist saw the Lord the day after baptizing Him, John the Baptist declared Him to be “the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world.” This means that Jesus Christ shouldered all the sins that we ever committed, that we are committing now, and that will ever be committed. He accepted them all when He was baptized, took them to the Cross, and was already condemned for them.





That is why the Apostle Paul proclaimed that there is no condemnation to those who are in Jesus Christ. In other words, those who truly believe in the baptism of Jesus Christ and His blood on the Cross, those who really believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior, cannot have any sin. This means it is impossible for them to be sinners. Because of the sins we commit, we cannot avoid but become sinners and be cast into hell, but if you believe in this Jesus Christ as your Savior, who has blotted out all the sins of the world by coming to this earth, being baptized, and dying on the Cross, if you really believe with all your hearts, then the Bible says that there is no longer any condemnation to you. This passage is a blessed declaration, proclaiming, “You can never say that you have sin.”

Yet despite this, my fellow believers, there are many people who say that they are sinful even as

they believe in Jesus Christ. When praying on behalf of the congregation, many Christians say, “Thank You, our holy Father. We have committed many sins in the past week. Please wash away our sins.” And how do they end their prayer? They say, “This unworthy sinner prays in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.”

How can a sinner pray to God? If a sinner proceeds to God, he will die immediately. It is written in the Bible that God does not hear the prayers of a sinner. Sinners are to be condemned by God. When Jesus Christ came to this earth to blot out our sins, and when He shouldered and took away all the sins of the world by being baptized and condemned on the Cross, how can there be any sin left in this world? No matter how insufficient we might be, Jesus Christ has blotted out our sins sufficiently, amply, and abundantly, and so what sin could you possibly have?



For example, let's say here that you have a tab running in a store. If your father already paid off your tab by an amount that is millions and billions of times greater than the actual amount you owe, then no matter how large a tab you might run afterwards, you still wouldn't owe any money. None other than this is salvation.

*"There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus" (Romans 8:1).* Among those who believe in Jesus Christ properly, there is absolutely no sinner. Everyone is righteous. Why? Because *"the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death" (Romans 8:2).* According to the Law, we have no choice but to be cast into hell, but what about the law of the Spirit of life, this law of love that saves us? To save sinners, the Lord came to this earth, accepted our sins, the sins of the world, by being baptized, was crucified and died in our place, rose from the

dead again to bring us back to life, and has thereby become our true Savior.

*"The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death" (Romans 8:2).* God, Jesus Christ, has set you and me, His believers, free from the law of sin and death. The people of Korea were under the Japanese rule during World War II, but once the day of liberation came on August 15, 1945, Korea was no longer a Japanese colony. Just like this, we are no longer sinners. If you really believe in Jesus Christ as your Savior, then you are not sinners. If there are those who describe themselves as sinners even though they believe in Jesus Christ, it is because they have been deceived by liars and believe in a false gospel.

Romans 8:3 states, *"For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin*



*in the flesh*” (Romans 8:3). Our flesh is too weak for us to keep the Law. Can we obey the Law? The Law commands us not to have any other gods, not to murder, not to commit adultery, not to steal, and not to bear false witness, but are you confident that you will not murder? Are you confident that you will not steal? Are you confident that you will not bear false witness? At the slightest hint of loss, you will lie and commit perjury.

Are you capable of not committing adultery? Jesus Christ said, “*You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not commit adultery.’ But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart*” (Matthew 5:27-28). Given this, can you really keep the statute of the Law commanding you not to commit adultery? Can you keep all the Law? Of course

not. We violate every statute of the Law. How do we violate it?

Setting the Law aside, can we keep even social norms? Do we keep all the traffic laws? When we are so busy, how can we use a crosswalk or an overpass? We jaywalk when others are not watching us. Anyone who thus breaks the law even just once is someone who has failed to keep the laws and rules of a society.

My fellow believers, when human beings are incapable of keeping their own man-made law on this earth, how could they keep the Law of God? If we break even just a single statute of the Law of God, then we are guilty of all, and God will invalidate our whole endeavor. As the Bible says, “*For whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet stumble in one point, he is guilty of all. For He who said, ‘Do not commit adultery,’ also said, ‘Do not murder.’ Now if you do not commit adultery, but you do murder, you have become a*



*transgressor of the law” (James 2:10-11).* So there is no one among us who has kept the Law to perfection before God. Therefore, all of us are bound to hell.

My fellow believers, as our flesh is weak, it is impossible for us to keep the Law. Though our hearts desire to keep the Law, our flesh is too weak to do so. So what did God do? He said in Romans 8:3-4, *“For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh, that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.”*

Our flesh is too weak for us to keep the Law, but God fulfilled this requirement of the Law. According to the Law, anyone with sin had to die, but as the Son of God came to this earth,

accepted all our sins by being baptized, and was condemned and died in our place, He met the requirement demanded by the Law. He fulfilled all the requirements of the Law and completed salvation.

Jesus Christ satisfied the Law. By fulfilling the requirement of the Law declaring the wages of sin to be death with His baptism and bloodshed, Jesus Christ has saved those who believe in Him as their Savior. When it says here that God the Father sent “His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh,” it means that to save us bound to hell, God passed our sins to Jesus Christ and placed on them on His body. Do you understand this? None other than this is the mystery of the baptism of Jesus Christ.

It is written, *“That the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the*



*Spirit. For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace” (Romans 8:4-6).*

My fellow believers, when considered only in carnal terms, how could we say that we have no sin, when in fact we continue to sin everyday in this world? Though we believe in Jesus Christ, how could we say that we are sinless? However, those who live according to the Spirit refer to those who believe that God has saved us perfectly through the gospel of the water and the blood.

If we believe in the Word of God with our hearts, if we really believe in the written Word, how could we then say that we have sin? There is no question that Jesus Christ has blotted out all our sins; the Bible clearly records that He has

done so; and God wrote the Scriptures as its proof in such a thick volume, preserved the Bible for thousands of years without change, and gave it to us just as it has always been. So given all this, how could we say, if we really believe in this Word, that we still have sin? At issue here is this: Should we believe in our own carnal thoughts, or should we believe in the Spirit, that is, in the Word of God? We must decide whether we would believe according to the written Word of God, or according to our own thoughts and emotions.

For those who believe in their own emotions, rather than believing in the written Word of God, their faith is all in vain. We must believe in God according to His Word. We must know and believe in Jesus Christ as our Savior according to the written Word. Our Lord is the God of the covenant who promised us and fulfilled His promises. Our Lord is a God who keeps all His



promises exactly according to His Word. To reiterate, in the Old Testament, God passed the sins of the people of Israel to their sacrificial animal through the High Priest as he laid his hands its head, made them cut the animal's throat, draw its blood and put in on the horns of the altar of burnt offering, and in doing so He enabled those who believed in this sacrifice of atonement to be saved.

In the New Testament, on the other hand, our Lord came to this earth over 2,000 years ago just as God had promised in the Old Testament, was baptized by John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, as a method of the laying on of hands, accepted all the sins of mankind, carried them to the Cross, died in our place, rose from the dead again, and has thereby saved us all. It is through this written Word that you and I know how our Lord has saved us, and it is by believing in this that we are saved. Those who believe so

are “those who live according to the Spirit.” Only when we know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit can we believe with our hearts, and only when we believe can we confess with our lips that we believe.

Let us turn to Leviticus 17:15-16. *“And every person who eats what died naturally or what was torn by beasts, whether he is a native of your own country or a stranger, he shall both wash his clothes and bathe in water, and be unclean until evening. Then he shall be clean. But if he does not wash them or bathe his body, then he shall bear his guilt.”* In the Old Testament, the people of Israel received the remission of their sins on the Day of Atonement when they saw and believed in what the High Priest was doing—that is, the High Priest enabled the Israelites to be washed from their sins by laying his hands on the sacrifice and passing their sins to it, thus offering the sacrifice on their behalf. However, if any



Israelite touched something unclean, like a carcass, then he had to wash his clothes and bathe his body with water. The Bible said that if he did not wash or bathe his body with water, he would bear guilt. This “water” is extremely important. Even after one receives the remission of his sins, it is still indispensable to continue to maintain his faith in the baptism of Jesus Christ.

## **Water’s Function to Wash**

One of water’s functions is that it washes away uncleanness. And water also gives life to mankind. Although we believe in the remission of our sins, do we not still commit sin again on this earth? Of course we do. However, even these sins are included in the sins of the world. The Lord has blotted them out also. Nonetheless, whenever we commit sin, our conscience is hurt

and tormented. What, then, should we do with these sins? Should we believe in Jesus Christ again? No, what we must do is to instead confirm in our hearts once again that these sins were also passed onto Jesus Christ when He was baptized, and believe with our hearts that our Lord took all our sins away like this precisely because He already knew that we would commit sin again. In other words, we need to ruminate on the gospel of salvation once again in our minds. It is then that we can be freed from all the sins that we commit out of our weaknesses. It is then that we are washed completely. And it is then that we are wholly saved and made perfectly righteous.

The Apostle Paul says that through the law of the Spirit of life—that is, through the gospel of the water and the Spirit—Christ Jesus has saved us, who had been moaning under the law of sin and death, and made us to dwell in Him. The Apostle John also states clearly in 1 John 5:3-8



that Jesus has perfectly freed us from sin by coming by the gospel of the water and the blood. He furthermore says that “the water, the blood, and the Spirit” bear witness of the fact that Jesus Christ has wholly saved us from sin. What does the Holy Spirit testify? He testifies that Jesus Christ is God. It bears witness of the fact that Jesus Christ is the God who created this universe, and that to save us human beings from our sins, He was born unto this earth through the body of a virgin in the image of man. What do the water and the blood testify? They testify that our Lord, the God of salvation, came in this way as a man, took upon all the sins of the world, all the sins of mankind, and all our sins by being baptized at the age of 30, carried these sins to the Cross and died on it.

Therefore, anyone who says that he believes only in Jesus Christ’s blood on the Cross has a completely useless faith, regardless of how long

he might have believed in Jesus Christ. Those who believe in this way also describe themselves as sinners, since they end up committing sin again tomorrow. But why do they think like this? It is because they do not realize that Jesus Christ accepted all their sins when He was baptized, and this is why they continue to live as sinners all the time even though they believe in Jesus Christ. Their conscience does not allow them to say that they are sinless.

But for you and me, when Jesus Christ was baptized, all our sins were passed onto Him. Throughout our entire lifetime, we cannot help but commit sin, whose darkness is on the face of the deep, and our hearts are indeed filthy beyond description, but Jesus Christ took upon all our sins through His baptism, went to the Cross, was crucified and condemned, shed His blood to death, rose from the dead again, and has thereby saved us perfectly from all our sins. The Lord is





alive even now, and He is the God who bestows salvation freely on whoever believes in this Word of salvation. What about you then? Do you also believe? If you believe with your hearts, God the Holy Spirit will know your hearts and seal you as the saved.

Jesus Christ is the God who brings salvation to us. It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we become God's children. Do you have sin or not? You no longer have any sin. That's because all your sins were passed onto the Lord. Does this then mean that we should commit sin freely? Of course not! We commit sin when we do not do what is right; it is not something that is committed just because we are told by someone to commit it, nor is it something that we can avoid just because someone extols us not to. All human beings are bound to commit sin until the day they die, for they are all insufficient. It is to save us from these sins that

our Lord came to this earth, and has indeed saved us wholly. All that we have to do is just believe in this. It is with the heart that one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth that confession is made unto salvation.

Let us once again turn to Genesis 1:2-5. *“The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the evening and the morning were the first day.”*

God commanded to let there be light in a pitch-dark world filled with darkness. This implies that the Son of God was sent to this earth. And it implies that God made His Son take upon all our sins by being baptized, and by



making His Son die on the Cross, God has saved us all from our sins.

What is it that God did on the first day? He shed light on people's hearts, which were without form and void, and where darkness was on the face of the deep, and in doing so He made all darkness and emptiness disappear and brought true satisfaction, true order, true light, and true life. Jesus Christ is the light of salvation for this world. Jesus Christ is the Savior of sinners. Jesus Christ is the Lord of life to us. To all those who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit, to all those who believe that Jesus Christ is our Savior and has saved us through His water and blood, Jesus Christ has become the light of salvation. My fellow believers, the only true light in this world is the Lord Jesus Christ. It is this light that God saw and said it was good.

The Bible says that God divided the light from the darkness. He separated the two and called the

light day, and the darkness was called night. There are two sorts of people in this world: The sons of the light and the children of the darkness (1 Thessalonians 5:5). The sons of the light are those who profess their faith, saying, "Before I knew Jesus Christ, I was indeed a pile of sin, where darkness was on the face of the deep, and my mind was confused. I was empty. I had no satisfaction. I had no choice but to be cast into hell. However, You have taught this Word to me through Your servants and Your Church. You have saved me perfectly. I believe in You, Lord!" To those who believed like this and received Him as their true Savior, God has named them the sons of day and given the right to become His children.

"You were once the Devil's children, but you are no longer the children of the darkness, but you are the children of the light. You are My children." This is what is implied when God



divided the light from the darkness. That is why the Apostle Paul declared to those who were born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, *“You were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord” (Ephesians 5:8).*

All those who believe in this Word of the water and the Spirit, in the blessed Word of salvation, are God’s children and His people. However, those who do not believe according to this Word are the children of the darkness, of night, and of the Devil. Although there are countless people in this world, depending on whether they believe in this or not, some become God’s people while others become the Devil’s people, and some go to Heaven while others are cast into hell. Like this, God has established the law of faith. He has made salvation reached only by faith. It is by believing with the heart that one is made righteous. It is by faith that we become God’s true people.

God has divided the light from the darkness clearly, separating those who are His people from those who are not. And He has prevented sinners from standing in the congregation of the righteous (Psalms 1:5). If someone became a pastor after studying very hard in a postgraduate course of a famous theological seminary but does not know the Truth and therefore still has sin in his heart, then he cannot preach this Word of Truth. He can only tell you, “Let us live virtuously.” If a blind man leads another blind man, both are bound to fall off a cliff and die (Matthew 15:14).

If someone who still remains a sinner were to teach you, you would never be freed from sin either. If you have sin, you will all be cast into hell, even if you believe in Jesus Christ. Why is it that Christians and non-Christians alike are all bound to hell then? It is because today’s churches have all turned into businesses. Too



many pastors behave exactly like canvassing peddlers. To the souls that are gathered in order to go to Heaven, these liars claim that they are asking for their blessings, but they are actually only exploiting them for money.

Who in this world would not want live virtuously? Yet because human beings cannot avoid but live their lives committing sin, they are bound to go to hell for their sins. They cannot but live miserable lives. That is why we must preach this gospel of salvation to such people, proclaiming that Jesus Christ has saved us through His water and blood. This is the true calling given to God's Church. We are the ones who believe in Jesus Christ as our Savior.

## What Is the Biblical Repentance?

Acts 3:19 says, *“Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord.”* This passage means, “Whoever repents properly and believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Lord will make him sinless.” In other words, it is telling us to receive our salvation by faith, for our Lord has blotted out our sins.

When we admit our fundamental weaknesses, saying, “We are only human; we cannot avoid but commit sin before God until the day we die,” and when we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord and return to God—none other than this is true repentance. If we come into the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel with which the Lord has blotted out all our sins, and if we receive the remission



of our sins by faith, then the Lord will give us times of refreshing. The true repentance that is made before God is to turn around from one's evil way and say, "Lord, what You said is right."

However, what is the dominant understanding for most people when they consider true repentance made to God? Instead of repenting, turning around, and receiving the remission of their sins once and for all, most people regard prayers of repentance to be synonymous with repentance itself. So they offer prayers of repentance whenever they commit sin again, saying, "Lord, I've done wrong. Please forgive me."

What a nonsense this is! As we have already seen in Mark 7:21-23, God said that out of people's hearts proceed twelve sins, such as evil thoughts, murder, adultery, thefts, jealousy, quarreling, fornication, and so forth. Therefore, true repentance is to admit to ourselves, saying,

"I am someone who can't help but sin until the day I die, until my flesh lasts. And I do indeed commit sin to my very end. So I am bound to hell"; turn around from the fallacious beliefs held so far; and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel with which the Lord has blotted out, once and for all, each and every sin that is committed in our entire lifetime. The true repentance that the Bible speaks of is to turn around from our fallacious beliefs to faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, to return to God,

However, virtually all Christians do not really dwell in the Truth, but far from it, they are actually dying in confusion. Their usual understanding of repentance is such that once they sin, they think they should realize their sin, and just resolve themselves, "I've done wrong. I will never sin again." This is what they think repentance is all about. That is because they have



been taught like this by their pastors who still do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When pastors say, “Wash away your personal sins that you commit everyday by giving prayers of repentance everyday,” this sounds quite plausible to our ears.

However, what does the Bible say? It says, “*Without shedding of blood there is no remission*” (Hebrews 9:22). It also states, “*The wages of sin is death*” (Romans 6:23). Three years before our Lord died on the Cross, He was baptized by John the Baptist, and by being crucified, He blotted out all the sins of this world.

If you consider this personally, assuming that you would live for 70 years, this means that our Lord, through His baptism, took upon each and every sin that you have ever committed and will ever commit into your old age, from the sins committed with the flesh to the sins committed

with the heart, from the sins you commit in your thoughts to the sins you commit out of your weaknesses, and from the sins you commit knowingly to the sins you commit unknowingly. Our Lord carried all these sins of the world to the Cross, shed His blood and was condemned for them in your place, rose from the dead again, and has thereby become the Savior of all who believe. The Lord is commanding all of us to believe in this Truth that has come by the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



## **The Notion That One Can Be Sanctified by Offering Prayers of Repentance Everyday Is a Groundless Claim**

The Lord said, *“You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free” (John 8:32)*. Our Lord told us to believe in the Truth. Jesus Christ bore the sins of this world through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, died on the Cross, rose from the dead again, and ascended to the Kingdom of Heaven. If you believe in this Jesus Christ as your Savior, then you will be saved from all your sins and destruction. Since the Lord bore all the sins of this world and took them all away through His baptism, if we believe in this Truth, then we can all stand in the light.

However, some people came up with a wicked doctrine out of their confusion, claiming, “Our

original sin was forgiven, but our personal sins are sanctified by giving prayers of repentance everyday.” So some pastors define and teach repentance based on human morals, not according to what the Bible actually says, and while this may sound good to the ears of those who are not born again, anyone who says so is a servant of the Devil.

In short, the notion that we must reach sanctification is a complete non-sense. When it is in our human nature to become weaker, more obstinate, and more hardened as we get older, how could we ever be sanctified? Pastors who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are lying to their congregation, not teaching the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. And they encourage the congregation to practice a work-based faith, and demand their followers to serve them. Far from setting their



congregation free, they seek to bind them with the work of the Law.

What we must grasp is the Truth that Jesus Christ, God Himself, came to this earth incarnated in the flesh, and has washed away all our sins of mankind by being baptized and shedding His blood on the Cross. It is this baptism of Jesus Christ, and His bloodshed and death on the Cross, that have washed away our sins and the condemnation of sin that awaited us. It is because this Jesus Christ has saved us from our sins and judgment for us that we could be saved by placing our faith in this Truth. And through those who have accepted this Truth as the light of salvation, God has made it possible for other souls to attain their true salvation and to preach it throughout the whole world.

That all of us can now become God's children, that everyone can now become God's child, is because God has completed the gospel of the

water and the Spirit for us. Just as God made this universe, the domain that we see with our eyes, and the heavens and the earth, God Himself has also accomplished the salvation given to sinners through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. What a wonderful news is this? How could we ever thank God enough, that we were able to become the light of the world? When we really think about how we were born on this earth and yet could become Heaven's people, it is so amazing and so thankful.

Our salvation from sin did not spring forth naturally, but it was made possible because God made us be born again and turned us into His own people. This Truth of salvation, the gospel of the water and the Spirit, is such a great and marvelous truth. Nothing in this world can be more marvelous than this gospel.

How could you have become the people of Heaven? God planned mankind's future and





made them become His people. We are only amazed and thankful for this. If human beings were to plan the creation of the universe, could they have achieved it? It is simply impossible for us humans to achieve this, but from the very moment that God created the universe, even before any human being was born on this earth, He made everything for the purpose of making mankind be born again from sin.

What a wonderful plan is this? As for myself, I can only thank the Lord for allowing me to spread this gospel and to serve Him. There really is nothing new on this earth, and to live for anything else but this gospel is only tiring itself. However, when we think about what is truly good on this earth, it is the fact that our God has made us His people. This is the most refreshing news that we are happy to hear everyday, that blesses us every time we think about it, and that

remains perfect even as we think about it everyday.

## **What Is the Most Precious Gift That God Has Given Us?**

There is no other news better than the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God has given us. Just this afternoon, I went out to evangelize with our brothers. What better news is there for sinners than to spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit to them? What greater and better gift is there for sinners than this gift, that God has saved them from sin? Would giving a box of fruit juice to the patients in a hospital compare to the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit that we are preaching? Is there anything that is greater than the fact that God has saved us from the sins of the world? There is nothing on this earth that



is greater for us mankind than the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

God created us and the heavens and the earth from the very beginning. God made us be born again on this earth to turn us into His own people in Heaven, and Jesus Christ gave us the gospel of the water and the Spirit, made us believe in it and be born again, and indeed turned us into God's people. What greater blessing is there in the world than this? Every time we think about this Truth, it is refreshing and joyful.

There is nothing that is more blessed or more comforting than the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When we think about the salvation of mankind and the grace of God, there really isn't anything that we humans can do, but all that we have to do is just give thanks and glory to God. All that we human beings have to do is just enjoy the blessed grace that God has given us by

believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The salvation given by God is so blessed, so wonderful, so great, and so majestic. So there is nothing else that we can do but only thank God by believing in this Truth, give glory to Him and praise Him, for this Truth can never be denied or challenged. The more time that goes by since our salvation, the more we realize just how precious this God-given gospel is. The more we preach the gospel, the more we experience firsthand just how wonderful and precious this salvation is. We come to believe that there is no greater blessing from God than this. The fact that people are freed from confusion, void, and darkness has been made possible through the shining gospel of salvation that God has given us.



## **The Emptiness of the Heart That Could Never Be Filled with the Things of This World**

Were it not for the light of salvation, we could never escape from our sins. How could sinners, whose thoughts are completely confused, ever untangle the knot of their tangled sins? How could the fallen mankind ever turn around by itself? It's simply impossible. How could human beings, who were born as sinners from the very moment they were born on this earth, ever be born again by themselves as the righteous? This task is humanly impossible. Only by believing in the true light of salvation that the Lord has given us is this made possible.

When human beings are fundamentally insatiable, how could they find satisfaction through their own efforts? Where could sinners

attain satisfaction? Would wealth satisfy them? No amount of wealth can bring satisfaction. Would you really be happy if you were rich? Would your empty hearts be filled with all that money? I've never had been a rich man, but even if I were, it would not fill my empty heart. No money can fill a heart that is completely void. There can be no satisfaction.

How can we fill our hearts with satisfaction? It's impossible. With what can we be filled? What can fill us to feel satisfied? With money? Or sex and pleasure? Computer games? Exciting hobbies? Soccer?

This sport soccer is a great game, of course. The pleasure of winning in a game is a great sensation. When our workers get together, we often play soccer ourselves. It's a thrilling sensation to dribble around your opponents and shoot to score, and see the ball flying into the net even though your opponents tried everything



possible to stop you. This pleasure that comes from winning a soccer game is sensational. One of the greatest pleasures that people feel is the pleasure of winning in sports. Just watching a game is thrilling enough for us, and if our team scores a point, we get all excited and go insane in joy. Some baseball fans love their game so much that they spend half their lifetime in a ballpark.

However, even all these things cannot really fill people's empty hearts. If a man makes the woman he loves happy, would she be satisfied? No, there is no real satisfaction in this. If he thinks, "I will do everything that the woman I love wants, even if it takes my life," and if he indeed does everything for her, would she then be satisfied? If he devotes his whole life to his partner, would his partner really be satisfied, would the emptiness in her heart disappear, and would she live filled with happiness and joy for the rest of her life? No, no matter how much he

might cherish her, she cannot live always happy. Human beings constantly demand greater satisfaction.

In the history of Israel, King Solomon lived the most opulent and extravagant life. He had countless queens and concubines, and his place and wealth were magnificent. However, nothing on this earth could fill his empty heart. That is why he lamented in Ecclesiastes, "Vanity of vanities, all is vanity. All is vanity and grasping for the wind." In other words, even if one is respected and revered by everyone else, there still is no satisfaction. That is why God described such a heart as "broken cisterns that can hold no water" (Jeremiah 2:13).

Why do some people do drugs? They turn to drugs because they cannot fill their empty hearts. No matter how they might have everything there is to have in this world, they still cannot find satisfaction. Their hearts are hollow. There is



nothing in their hearts. Human beings cannot fill their void hearts with anything in this world. No one else can find satisfaction apart from those who have accepted the Truth that God has saved us, that He has made us be born again, that He has turned us into His people, and that He has made us righteous. Until one is born again and receives Jesus Christ into his heart, he can never fill the emptiness of his heart.

A void heart can be satisfied only when it is filled with this Jesus Christ given by God. God has driven away our sins that had made our hearts formless and void, and that had darkness on the face of the deep, and in their place He has given us the gift of Truth to fill our hearts abundantly. He has saved us by bestowing this gift on us in abundance. The born-again have satisfaction and true joy in their hearts. Only the satisfaction of the soul is the real satisfaction of the heart. In contrast, however, there can never

be any satisfaction in the hearts of those who are not born again.

## **The Satisfied Faith of Those Who Have Been Born Again by Believing in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

We can find true satisfaction only if we are born again by believing in the Truth of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ, the true light. We must believe in this salvation, that Jesus Christ has made us be born again of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Without this Jesus Christ, we can never solve all the problems of the sins of our souls, the emptiness of our hearts, and our thoughts of confusion. It is Jesus Christ who can solve all these things. There is no



one else who can make us happy apart from Jesus Christ. It is Jesus Christ who gives us true satisfaction.

We may do this and that, and we may also become rich, but there is still no satisfaction. True satisfaction is nowhere to be found. It is when we serve the Lord that we can finally find satisfaction, it is when we do God's work that there is satisfaction, and it is when we believe in Jesus Christ and are born again that we are satisfied. In short, it is when we walk with Him that there is satisfaction.

God said, "Darkness was on the face of the deep," implying that there is sin deep in the hearts of people. Do people know all their sins? No, they don't realize their sins. Even though they are born with sin, they are oblivious to their own sins. What about you then? When did you realize your sins? Did you realize who you really were when you heard the gospel? When the light

was shone? Or did you know this before then? Before you believed in Jesus Christ, you probably considered yourselves to have committed few sins. When the Bible says that darkness was on the face of the deep, this means that there is no one who has a clear understanding of his sins.

However, even if one does not know Jesus Christ, once he repeatedly commits appalling sins in this world, he then comes to be at least slightly aware of himself, realizing, "Oh, so this is who I am." Nonetheless, no sooner does he reach this self-awareness when he reverts back to his confusion, thinking, "No, I can actually live virtuously. It's because of what others have done to me that I've done so." It's because people's thoughts and hearts are fundamentally confused that they think like this. Unless one meets Jesus Christ, he cannot exactly realize that there is sin in him. Unless he is born again, he cannot know



this for sure. Until he encounters the true light, there is no way to know.

That darkness was on the face of the deep means that human beings do not know what kind of a sinner they are. They do not realize that none other than they themselves are sinners and that they are bound to hell. Human beings are incapable of knowing their own sins. They can never know until the light of Truth is shone. Everyone thinks that he is virtuous. People think they are practically equivalent to angels. Before I received the remission of sin, I, too, considered myself good.

When I was a child, I was known in the neighborhood as a good kid. My neighbors used to comment how I was so courteous and friendly, never getting into trouble and always behaving nicely. Just a polite greeting to the elderly can go a long way to earn favorable points. If a kid greets the elderly courteously, he earns 90 points;

if he picks up garbage, carries some luggage for them, and helps out in the neighborhood, then he is a perfect kid, scoring 100. I used to be such a child back then. I never heard anyone saying that I was a bad kid.

However, as I grew older, I did so many bad things that I can't even remember them all. I used to bully other kids, and I constantly got into a fight in school. If I wasn't fighting, then I made sure that the other kids were fighting. I did this just because I was bored. So having started a fight, I would gather around spectators and watch. I would say to my friends, "You should each bring something to munch. There is a good show going on today. You should come. So and so are going to fight each other." My friends would then all gather together, leaving everything aside, homework and all.

At any rate, I did many bad things, including provoking a gang fight like this. When I think



about it now, I was constantly doing many mischievous things. However, even though there was nothing in me that was commendable, my neighbors all commended me as a good person. I myself thought that I was a good person. I always had a high self-esteem, thinking, “Is there anyone who is as good as me?” I really thought that I was the most virtuous person.

I thought, “Sure, I sometimes fight with my friends, but so what? This is just a routine for every adolescent. It’s what kids do. How is this a sin? Bleeding noses and foreheads are just part of growing up.” Although none other than this is murder, jealousy, theft, foolishness, and evil thoughts that constitute sin, I thought it was all okay back then. Since I didn’t know the Law, I didn’t know sin, nor did I realize it.

In other words, before one receives the light of Truth, he is incapable of knowing sin. How can people know sin then?

There was a famous Buddhist monk named Sungcheol in Korea. This monk confessed that he realized he was a sinner only when he was nearing his death. To reach a spiritual awakening, he had cut himself off from the outside world and disciplined his mind for ten years, not even lying down once but always seated and constantly staring at the wall. The result of all this effort was the realization that he had deceived countless people.

When people outside saw how the monk had isolated himself from the rest of the world in a tiny temple and lived like this for ten years, they all exclaimed in admiration, saying, “Wow! He is a living Buddha! There is no one else like him in this world. He is the living Buddha of this age.” Sungcheol heard this for ten long years. However, the monk himself admitted, “I am not a living Buddha. I’ve lusted after so many women, and I’ve committed all kinds of filthy





acts in my thoughts. While I may seem to have not lied down, I actually did lie down, and while I may not seemed to have eaten, I actually did eat.” He was like this in his heart. So nearing his death, he left a poem of his last words, which states, “I would fall into the bottomless pit of hell, for I have deceived so many people for my whole life.” However, when his followers heard this, they praised him even more, saying, “What a great monk he is! He is so humble that he lowered himself like this.”

It is written, “*Darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters*” (Genesis 1:2). No one knows his sins before he hears the Word. It says, “*God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good.*” In other words, it is by knowing Jesus Christ, by hearing the Word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and through the God-given light that

we were able to know our true selves correctly, and came to realize that we had great sins in our hearts, and that we were terrible sinners bound to hell before God. That is how we could become light and God’s people. Truly, this is the grace of God. What greater gift is there than this?

What greater event is there than this event? What is more significant than this event when God made human beings His own people and His own children? God sent His own Son to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, and made Him receive baptism, atone for all our sins, wash them all away, shoulder the sins of the world and carry them to the Cross, and bear the condemnation of our sins in our place. There is no greater creation than this creation that made us righteous.

I give all my thanks to God for giving us such a great gift. ☒



## **First Day: In the Beginning God Created the Heavens And the Earth**

**<Genesis 1:1-5>**

**“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the evening and the morning were the first day.”**

In the Book of Genesis, the purpose for which God created us is explained. When architects design a building or artists draw a painting, they first conceive the work that would be completed in their minds before they actually begin working on their project. Just like this, our God also had our salvation of mankind in His mind even before He created the heavens and the earth, and He made Adam and Eve with this purpose in mind. And God needed to explain to us the domain of Heaven, which is not seen by our eyes in the flesh, by drawing an analogy to the domain of the earth that we can all see and understand.

Even before the foundation of the world, God wanted to save mankind perfectly by giving the gospel of the water and the Spirit to everyone’s heart. So although all human beings were made out of dust, they must learn and know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit to benefit their own souls. If people continue to live without



knowing the dominion of Heaven, they will lose not only the things of the earth, but also everything that belongs to Heaven.

However, in today's Christianity, it is next to impossible to find the lesson that enables us to understand the spiritual domain of Heaven, which the Book of Genesis reveals to us. That is because even the leaders of Christianity are unable to escape from darkness, for they neither know nor believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, for Christians to ensure that their souls would prosper according to the purpose of God's creation, all of them must first have the proper knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God has given us. Since there had been no way for them to become God's people until now, this is all the more reason to attain the true faith that enables them to receive the spiritual blessings of Heaven.

Even at this very moment, God is building His Kingdom in people's hearts with the spiritual gospel of the water and the Spirit. Everyone must now be able to see the spiritual domain of Heaven with the eyes of faith, believing in the Word of God. This is possible only if people are saved from sin through their faith in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. As such, to enable them to reach the spiritual realm of Heaven, we must preach the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit to everyone.

The purpose for which God created this whole universe and everything in it was to give us the gift of His Kingdom. Furthermore, God decided in His providence to give us this Kingdom through the power of His gospel. In other words, God has bought the salvation of our souls, so that we may enter the Kingdom of Heaven by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Our Lord was more than able to save



every believer from all his sins once and for all, for He came to this earth, took upon all the sins of this world through the water baptism He received from John the Baptist, shed His blood while shouldering these sins of the world, and rose from the dead again.

Now, God has enabled our spirits to reach the dominion of Heaven by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And to all human beings, God has given the desire to look for the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that is, He has “*put eternity in their hearts*” (*Ecclesiastes 3:11*).

Through the history of the creation of the heavens and the earth, God sought to create His Kingdom in our hearts also. When today’s Scripture passage said that “the earth was without form,” it was referring to the condition of the human heart, which has been all tangled because of sin. And God also said, “*Let there be light.*” This passage implies that although

everyone was born with countless sins in his heart from the very moment he was born into this world, he can now be born again. By shining the light of the real Truth of salvation on everyone with sin, God sought to correct our hearts that were already confused by sin.

Before we knew the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we all had sin in our hearts, and therefore we were incapable of realizing by ourselves what was so confused in our hearts. In other words, everyone was living without realizing that he was cut off from God because of his sins. So human beings could not know what true goodness was, nor what their wickedness was, still less of true salvation. Even now, those who have not been born again are still mired in their confusion, so much so that they mistake the greatest wickedness to be the greatest goodness. That is why God said, “The earth was without



form,” He was declaring that everyone’s heart is like a tangled knob.

Everyone is born with all the sins inherited from his parents of the flesh, from the moment he is born into this world (Psalms 51:5.... “*Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, And in sin my mother conceived me.*”; Mark 7:21.... “*For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,*”). The Bible states that everyone cannot help but commit sin all the time, precisely because he is born with sin by nature (Romans 7:17-20). However, just as everyone was already born with sin because of one man, Adam, everyone can now become a righteous person in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

## **These Are the Things That Everyone Has Misunderstood**

The Word of God says that by nature, everyone is a pile of sin, for everyone inherited sin from his forefathers. In other words, God says that no one can avoid but commit sin throughout his life, for everyone was born with the materials of sin from the very moment he was born.

For many, however, their conceptions on such issues of sin are quite fallacious. They think that their hearts are good and decent by nature, and that they commit sin unwittingly only because of their circumstances—under ideal circumstances, they would not sin at all. What we must realize, however, is that people commit sin not because of their unfortunate circumstances, but because they were all born with sin by nature. We need to realize that the descendants of Adam and Eve



inherited each and every sin from their ancestors from the day they were born into this world, and that this is why they are committing sin constantly in their lives. Only through the Word of God can we realize our sins and grasp their basic nature properly.

God says that everyone is “*a brood of evildoers*” (*Isaiah 1:4*). The very seed of mankind can be compared to a bad tree. Every tree bears fruit according to its kind. If apple seeds are planted and a tree grows out of this, then this tree will undoubtedly bear apples. The apple tree cannot avoid this, just because it does not want bear apples. Just as it is only a matter of course for an apple tree to bear apples, it is only a matter of course for everyone to commit sin while living in this world, for every human being was born with all the materials of sin from the moment he was born into this world.

God said that it is because everyone was born with sin from his very birth that all human beings commit sin constantly, and we must believe in this Truth and admit it in our hearts. If you were born as a seed of sin, like a spiritual thorn bush, then you are bound to live constantly committing sin. Just as it is only self-evident that a thorn bush should bear thorns, so is it only too obvious for sinners to commit sin in their lives. As Jesus said, “*Every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit*” (*Matthew 7:17*).

What we need to realize here is the self-evident truth that human beings, born as sinners, can only bear bad fruits. Since everyone inherited a sinful heart from his parents when he was born, everyone is bound to sin all the time, no matter how much he might desire otherwise. This is why we must believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit with our hearts. The truth is that only then is it possible for us to be



washed from all our sins by faith and become God's people. So everyone needs the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Have you ever realized your basic nature? Although many people have asked themselves, "Who am I? Where did I come from, and where am I heading?" no one in this world ever found satisfactory answers to such questions all on his own. Answers to such questions can be found only by believing in the Word of God, but because people are trying to find the answer in their own frame of muddled perception, all that this has done is just worsen the confusion of their minds. So countless philosophers have ended up covering up their confusion with the nebulous notion of "agnosticism."

Are you lost spiritually, wandering around because of the sins that you commit? If this is the case, then you have also failed to understand your own sinful nature, and thus you are unable

to receive the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of the washing of sin. Jesus is saying to everyone, "Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." Yet even so, virtually everyone's thoughts are still confused at the very foundation, unable to discern what is right and what is good, and living amid confused values. Therefore, we must first be washed from our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit before God. To do so, we ourselves must realize from the written Word that we were all born with sin. Only then can we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of salvation, and have our hearts washed from our sins.

To wash away our sins, God has taught everyone His two laws. As one of these two laws, God gave us the Word of the Law that makes us realize our sins, and as the other law, God gave us the law of the Spirit that makes



everyone free from all his sins. First, by giving us the Law, God wanted to teach us what our sins are, and just how severely He judges these sins.

As we know, there are 613 commandments of God in the Law, and the Ten Commandments capture its essence. Of these Ten Commandments, the first four commandments specify the duties that we have to keep in relationship with God. Put differently, through these first four commandments, God is telling us, “I have created you and everything in this world, and therefore you must not worship what is on this earth nor serve it.” The remaining six commandments from the fifth to the tenth are statutes that human beings must keep in relationship with each other. Like this, God gave us the Ten Commandments, but no one could ever keep this Law to perfection.

Whether we admit it or not, God has made us. And God loves us. God is our Master and our

King. So it is only proper for God to say to us, “You shall have no other gods before Me.” Since God is the One who created us, it is imperative that we obey Him. If we do not believe according to this Word and do not obey it, then this constitutes a sin before God. Unfortunately, however, we failed to realize properly that God is the Creator who made the heavens and the earth. Although God commanded mankind to serve only Him, to obey and believe in Him alone, human beings have failed to do so, believing in and serving something other than God.

Therefore, to human beings born with sin, it was necessary for there to be God’s commandments that would enable them to realize their sins. And through the Word of the commandments of God, we were able to realize just how many sins we committed before God in our lives. For those who thus recognized their sinfulness, God wanted to wash them with the





gospel of the water and the Spirit, make them His people, and build His Kingdom with them. God established His Law for everyone in order to set mankind free from all its sins, bless it, and turn it into His own people. It is absolutely necessary for all of us to realize this and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

If we do not know the Law of God, on the other hand, then we will forever remain incapable of admitting our sins. Why? Because without God's Law, our sins cannot be established. If there is no Law of God, which is the absolute standard of good and evil, nor would there be our transgressions (Romans 4:15, 7:8).

We think ourselves to be wise in our own way. And we have own value system according to each. We have a habit of thinking, "This is good, that is evil; this is right, that is wrong," but only on our own and for our own convenience. So we end up concluding that what benefits us is good,

and what harms us is evil. However, such a judgment is of our own making and selfishness.

We human beings are not capable of establishing any law on our own, for we are no more than creatures that must obey the Law established by God. God has given His Law to all of us. This Law of God commanded us, "You shall not have any gods before Me." That is why our hearts must acknowledge and obey the Law of God.

If we recognize God's Law, then to covet others' possessions constitutes a sin. Have you not coveted what others have, and have you not wished to possess what others possess? We all are capable of coveting such things as our neighbor's wife or husband, wealth or car. Moreover, we don't just covet these things in our hearts, but we are also capable of placing our covetousness into action to make all the objects of our lust ours. God made it clear that such



thoughts and deeds are sins. And God also told us that to bear false witness against our neighbor constitutes a sin. He said that theft is also a sin. He said that adultery is a sin, as is murder. He said that failure to honor our parents also constitutes a sin. And He said that to worship anything else but God is a sin that would destroy us.

If we accept the Law of God into our hearts and examine our deeds based on this Law, we can all realize that we have indeed committed many sins before God. From the moment we were born, we were already born as sinners, having inherited all the sins that were in our parents' hearts, from murder to adultery and theft. Since we all have such a heart for murder, adultery, and theft, God is more than justified to say to us, "You are sinful." However, although human beings were all born with such sins in

their hearts from the beginning, they do not realize this themselves.

Even though we humans have a murderous desire in our hearts, God sees that we don't even realize this. So by giving us His Law commanding us not to murder, God has enabled us to realize that we are murderers. In other words, it is to teach us that we are such "piles of sin" that God gave us the Law. Everyone is a sinner before God. Irrespective of how high or low one's social status may be, everyone was a sinner before God. The Bible makes it clear that we were all sinners.

The first man and woman created by God were Adam and Eve. Yet they both ended up sinning before Him. Deceived by the Devil's temptation, they betrayed God. As a result, all human beings born as the descendants of Adam and Eve are born with the same sinful desires and



nature that their forefathers had before God. That is why everyone became a sinner before God.

When God said in today's Scripture passage, "The earth was without form," He was pointing out that we ourselves did not realize that we were sinners. Because human beings did not know themselves, God was saying, "You are sinners with transgressions." Therefore, we must first learn about the Law of God, and through this Law realize that we were great sinners before God. This is how everyone can realize how their hearts were all confused, and, taking a step further, be saved by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of salvation. All of us must know properly that "human beings commit sin because they were born with sin from the beginning," and our minds must grasp clearly that we have to receive the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Do you believe that you are sinners before God? Most people, however, do not even realize their sinful nature, nor do they know the Law that teaches them about the absolute goodness of God. They have thus fallen into a great confusion, completely oblivious to the fact that they are great sinners. Nonetheless, God writes all the sins that people commit in the tablet of their conscience and in the Book of Deeds before the throne of God, and He is waiting for the judgment day to come. Regardless of whether you have sinned before man or God, secretly or openly, if you have committed any sin that troubles your conscience, then God has written it all down in the tablet of your conscience, recording, "You have committed these sins" (Jeremiah 17:1). Irrespective of whether we recognize God's Law or not, God still writes all our sins in the tablets of our hearts. Moreover, even if we forget about our transgressions, there



is no way for us to escape from the condemnation of these sins, for all our sins are also written in the Book of Deeds. That is why those who have sin can never say with a clear conscience, “I have no sin,” but, on the contrary, they can only condemn themselves, confessing, “I am a sinner.”

Since God has written down clearly all the sins that everyone commits in the tablet of his heart, no one can deny that he is a sinner. For instance, let’s assume here that we have committed theft unintentionally. And we have forgotten the fact thoroughly. But God speaks to our conscience, “You have stolen,” and He also writes this in the tablets of our hearts. This applies not only to theft, but everything else. If we had a murderous desire or acted on such a desire, then regardless of whether the sin was witnessed by others, God still writes it into the tablets of our hearts and makes us feel guilty in

our conscience. So even if none of us knows about our transgressions, because these sins are written in our conscience, we have no choice but to confess to God and admit, “I have committed these sins.”

All that we have to do is just admit our sinfulness to God and recognize the strictness of His Law. We only have to confess, “I am a sinner before God.” Why does God demand this from us? Why does God want to hear us admitting to Him that we are sinners? It is to blot out our sins that God wants to first hear us confessing, “I am a sinner.” This is akin to a person of high position bestowing a gift of mercy to his subordinates. A gift is all the more worthwhile when it is something that the recipient needs desperately; if the recipients gets something that he can get by without, then he is not so thankful for this gift. God wants to bestow



His grace of salvation on those who are in desperate need.

However, before we really knew the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we could not realize properly through the Word of God what kind of sin we had committed. I, too, was previously like this. Before I came to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and know Jesus, I did not know my sins that well. We have an instinctive tendency to justify our sins and to defend our sinful selves. And we have a predilection to hide our sins.

However, when we try to hide our sins from God, our hearts suffer. In contrast, when we admit to God that we have committed such sins, and when we acknowledge our sinful minds, our hearts are finally quenched. Like this, it is those who honestly recognize their true selves before God that can reach true salvation through the

work of Jesus Christ who has blotted out our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

## **The Entire Human Race Must Recognize the Truth which Has Washed away Their Sins through the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

Each of us must know exactly how God has blotted out the sins of mankind. We must all believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must all realize that the Lord took upon our sins once for all by being baptized, and that He bore all the condemnation of these sins in our place by being crucified. If we hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit and believe in it with our hearts, all our sins will be washed away and we will be saved.



Our lives don't just end here on this earth. God wanted to blot out all the sins that you commit while on this earth, make you sinless, take you to the Kingdom of Heaven, and live with you forever. So He planned accordingly even before the foundation of the world, and when the time came, He sent His only begotten Son Jesus Christ and fulfilled everything according to this plan. However, on our part, only if we believe and accept that God has blotted our sins can we be saved. That is why all of us must believe in Jesus Christ as our Savior. Thus, because we were all clearly born with sin before God, and because we are all sinners bound to commit sin until the day we die, it is only when we admit this and place our faith in Jesus Christ that we can receive God's grace and love.

### ***“In the Beginning God Created the Heavens and the Earth”***

Even before the foundation of the world, God had planned to create human beings and make them be born again in Jesus Christ. On the first day of His creation, God did two things: First, He created the domain of the heavens and the earth; and second, He created light. God made mankind, but He not only made it, but He also gave it the light of salvation, creating the whole universe for the purpose of making us the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit His own children.

Our beliefs and faith must begin from knowing the answer to the following question: “What is the purpose for which God created the human race?” Only then can we find out what kind of faith God wants from us, and only then can we meet God by believing in the gospel of



the water and the Spirit. When God created this whole universe and everything in it, how was His purpose placed? The purpose of creation was to make us be born again from sin and turn us into God's own people. This task of God making us His people is what our Lord Jesus Christ fulfilled. The first purpose for which God created the whole universe and mankind was to make human beings be born on this earth, illuminate them with the light of salvation, and thereby turn them into God's people and perfect them.

It is written, *“Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good; and God divided the light from the darkness. God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. So the evening and the morning were the first day” (Genesis 1:3-5).*

The very first thing that God wanted to do to us is written here in Genesis 1:1-5. As a builder constructs a house for a purpose, so did God

create His whole universe and everything in it according to His own plan. What was this plan? It was to make mankind His own people, and He achieved this.

That is why you and I must accept the light of salvation into our hearts while we are still living on this earth, before we go to God. It is imperative for us to know exactly why God made mankind and how He planned our salvation in Jesus Christ, and we must all believe and accept this. Why did God make us? What is the purpose for which God created us? We need to understand what it means when God said, “Let there be light”; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good.” This was for God to make sinners righteous with the light of Truth.

Genesis 1:1 states, *“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.”* This passage not only explains that God made the whole universe and everything that our eyes of the flesh



see, but it also implies that God made the spiritual dominion of Heaven for us. All creatures born in this universe must know the plan of God. Just as everything in the universe was created by God, so are all sinners recreated by God and made righteous through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Even now, our God is working to lead sinners to be righteous through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. So while God made the realm of creatures, the particular purpose of all His creation was to make us His children. In other words, God made the domain of creatures to give us the blessing of becoming His people. The will of God is to turn you and me into His people.

When we read the Bible saying, “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth,” we must realize why God created the universe and everything in it. God made this

universe and all things in it for the purpose of creating mankind, and also to make human beings His people by washing away their sins through Jesus Christ, the light, and transforming them into the children of the light. This is what we must realize and believe. God wrote the Bible for the purpose of saving us, for our salvation.

God created the universe and everything in it, and this Truth tells us that He made them in order to move us from the place of sinners to the place of the righteous. So while we have now become righteous people by believing and accepting in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, until you and I reached this stage, we all had been sinners. The Word of God that has taught us this Truth is so amazing and marvelous.

When we examine ourselves, we see just how worthless we all are, no more than a handful of dust. Yet even for such worthless beings like us, God created these majestic dominions of heaven





and earth to make us His children. When we think about this, we are reminded of Paul, who confessed, *“Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and His ways past finding out!”* (Romans 11:33), and, *“For of Him and through Him and to Him are all things, to whom be glory forever. Amen”* (Romans 11:36).

As the Apostle Paul preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit to this world and labored for the work of God, he discovered the greatness of God’s will for us, and he often marveled at this. Indeed, what are human beings that God created the heavenly domain to make sinners righteous and turn them into His people? When the angel of light, Lucifer, challenged God, God did not forgive him but cast him into Hades. Yet for human beings, God came up with a plan to allow them to become His children by believing in the

Word of Truth, God’s gift of salvation, and fulfilled it all in Jesus Christ.

God said to us, *“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son”* (John 3:16). So when God said let there to be light, there was light, and God has shone this light on this world; those who obey this light, God through His grace allows them to be His people, and those who reject the light of God, He judges them according to His justice. God did such a majestic work for us through His providence that we cannot grasp His will unless we know it through the light of Truth.

As I have received the remission of my sins from the Lord, and as I now carry on with my life, there is nothing else I can do but only thank God, for His plan for us is so grand, great, and magnificent. Since we have nothing to boast of before God, all that we can do is just thank Him through our faith. I believe that God created this



universe because He had a wonderful plan for mankind. Do you also believe this? It is because we have the Holy Spirit in us that we can believe in God's plan with our hearts. God planned our salvation in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and it is for this purpose that He made us.

God has shone the light of salvation on us. This God, who has illuminated us with the light of salvation, let there be treasures in your hearts and mine, in these clay vessels of ours. It is because we have the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit in our hearts that we are able to believe in all the Word of God and work united with Him. There are many parts in the Bible that we simply cannot understand if we think in carnal terms. However, because there is the Holy Spirit in our hearts, we are able to understand and believe in God's work.

We really need to grasp what God is trying to say to us through this Word of the Scriptures. For

us to believe in God's Truth and become His people, we must realize the kind of plan God has for us and what kind of work He has achieved. Many of today's Christians are studying the Bible, but there is more to studying and investigating the Word of God than just learning about the Bible intellectually and memorizing its passages by rote. The purpose of studying the Bible, the Word of God, is to find out what plan God has for us.

The Bible says that God has made us light, and we must accept the true light of salvation. God calls those who do not accept the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit the children of Satan. We must all realize that God had a magnificent plan of salvation for us, and He has fulfilled it all. As we carry on in our lives without faith, only when we realize what blessings God has given us, and only when we



believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, can we then really believe in His will.

## What Sets Us Free from the Chaotic Confusion of Our Hearts?

Let us turn to Genesis 1:2. It is written, “*The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.*”

In the Bible, the earth denotes the human heart. That the earth was without form means that the human heart is confused and empty. In other words, people are now living in confusion and have a void of emptiness, for they have not encountered the Word of the Truth of salvation. To cast off such confusion of mankind, we must have the proper knowledge “of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment” (John 16:8). Put

differently, it is when you hear and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that you can receive the remission of your sins and be truly freed from your confused hearts. Unfortunately, however, too many people still do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and so their thoughts and hearts are still wandering from being lost in confusion.

Those who still have not received the light are struggling because they are unable to escape from their confused thoughts. However, when the light of the Truth of salvation comes into their hearts, their confusion will also be shed all at once.

God said to us, “*‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good.*” When God illuminated this pitch-dark world with the light, darkness receded away instantly. Like this, God saw what He did for us, and it was good. Our knowledge of God begins



from knowing the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that has come by Jesus Christ. When He shines the light of salvation on us, there is no darkness that can linger anymore.

Therefore, we who have become the light of Truth must spread this gospel of the water and the Spirit to everyone in this world. When we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to people in this world, confusion will be shed from everyone's heart. There is no doubt that the gospel of the water and the Spirit believed and preached by us will lead countless people to Jesus Christ. When they believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit in their hearts, the emptiness of their hearts will also disappear and their sins will be also be blotted out. If you accept this gospel of the water and the blood into your hearts, your sins will disappear.

The Bible speaks about the light of the Truth of salvation. The foundation of this salvation is

the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. While the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the foundation of the Truth in salvation, this gospel itself is actually the light of salvation as well, and our everything is compressed in this gospel. Found in this gospel are our lives as the righteous, our genuine faith, and our hope for every blessing that God has promised us.

God is working as the light of the Truth of salvation in people's thoughts, in their confusion, in their emptiness, and in the minds of the sinful. The Bible says, "*The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters*" (*Genesis 1:2*). God works according to His written Word.

We, too, must serve the gospel and live our lives by our faith, believing according to the Word of God. When we believe in the written Word, and by this faith preach to everyone, "This is what the gospel of the water and the Spirit is," the Holy Spirit will work through this Word and



new believers will come into the love of God. “The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters” (Genesis 1:2). God works through His Truth according to His Word. The Spirit of God works in the hearts of those who are confused, empty, and sinful through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and he washes away all the sins of everyone.

God is saying to us clearly, “*The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters*” (Genesis 1:2). The “Spirit” here refers to the Holy Spirit. Seeing this passage, we are convinced that the Spirit of God has enabled people to attain salvation by working through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. For those of you who now believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Holy Spirit is in your hearts also.

Can you feel how the Holy Spirit is working in your hearts with the Word of God? The Holy

Spirit works through the written Word of God, according to our faith. When we hear the Word of God and believe in and accept it, the Holy Spirit in our hearts bears witness inside us. He speaks to us in our hearts, “Yes, that is right. Believe and accept. Follow by trusting in God.”

The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. What, then, does it mean here by “these waters”? In the Bible and especially in this passage, water refers to the Word of God. More narrowly, however, this water refers to the baptism that Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist. 1 Peter 3:21 says, “*There is also an antitype which now saves us—baptism.*” God works exactly according to His Word, together with the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit.

We should all realize that when we know that the Holy Spirit works according to this Word, believe and accept this, and follow the Word of



God clearly, God will then work on supporting our faith. We must have faith in God's Word.

### **The Bible Says, “*God said, ‘Let there be light’ and there was light*”**

Genesis 1:3-4 says, “*Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good.*” God came to this pitch-dark world as the light. It means that the Lord has blotted out our sins and now dwells within our hearts. In other words, with this light of Truth, God has blotted out all our sins, made us His people, breathed His Spirit into our hearts, and by doing so made us belong to Jesus Christ. That we have thus become God's people is the greatest miracle of all miracles.

Before Jesus Christ gave the gospel of the water and the Spirit to this world, it was all

completely dark. As it is written, “*The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters*” (Genesis 1:2). This world was so pitch-dark that there was only confusion, void, and darkness, but when God commanded with His Word, “Let there be light,” light sprang forth in this world. The Bible makes it clear that there could be light in this world only because God so commanded.

Like this, our Lord actually came to this earth and made us God's people through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Put differently, it is because God uttered His Word that everything was fulfilled according to this Word, and we have thus been saved from the sins of the world and become God's people. That we have become God's people was achieved exactly according to the Word that God spoke to us.



Because we did not know God in our hearts and were sinful, all that we could do was just wait for the day we were cast into hell, into our eternal death. We were all far away from God, for we were all fundamentally sinful. Because of the sin of Adam and Eve, we were born under a curse, and there was no glimpse of light whatsoever in our hearts, nor anything else but complete emptiness and sin. Fundamentally speaking, there was no light of life in our hearts. In other words, there was no gospel of Truth. Our hearts had nothing else but darkness, emptiness, and confusion entangled all together, and yet when God said, “Let there be light,” light came to exist in our hearts. The Bible says that light came into existence as God commanded to let there be light.

Our Lord’s creation of the heavens and the earth speaks about none other than the rebirth of our souls. By nature, there was nothing in our

human souls but emptiness, darkness, and confusion, but God spoke to us. God told us that Jesus Christ came to this earth and illuminated us with the light of salvation. The Lord is saying that He came to mankind who only had confusion and emptiness, and that He entered into those who accepted this light. My fellow believers, how were we able to become God’s people? When viewed by the Word of God, this may seem only a self-evident truth, but when we look at ourselves, that we can now call God as our Father, and that we have now become His people, this would not have been possible except for God’s blessed gospel work of the water and the Spirit. This had been completely impossible, but it was made possible because the Lord came looking for us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

It is because God worked in our hearts through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we



have been made righteous, and it is because God has saved us through this gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have become His people. In fact, we can attain our salvation by accepting by faith everything that God has already achieved. When you and I ask ourselves, “How did we become the children of light? How did we become God’s children?” and really reflect on these questions, we can only marvel at the grace of God. With His Word, God has made us the children of light.

When God created the heavens and the earth, the whole universe and everything in it, God commanded to let there be light, and light sprang forth in a pitch-dark world. This is how darkness receded away from the world. Then, the world became vibrant with all sorts of lives: All animals, birds in the sky, and fish in the sea came into being. It is by the Word of God that everything thus came into existence. Like this,

just as everything in the universe sprang forth by the light that came into being by God’s commandment, God has made us His children through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

All the trees and grass in this world, all the birds in the sky, all the fish in the sea, and all the people on this earth received new life by the light and came into existence by the light. Who is the God that commanded to let there be this light? It is none other than Jesus Christ, the Savior who has saved us from sin.

## **Jesus Is Our God and Savior Who Created the Heavens and the Earth**

Through the Book of Genesis, we can meet Jesus Christ. He is the Creator God. The very God who commanded to let there be light in this world is our Savior Jesus. This is our Messiah.





Jesus is none other than God Himself who spoke into existence the creation of the universe and everything in it. In other words, God, who created the heavens and the earth with His Word, made this universe and everything in it. That is why we say that Jesus is Logos, the God of the Word.

When we turn to the Gospel of John, it is written, *“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made” (John 1:1-3).*

The God of the Word that created the heavens and the earth became man, came to this earth, and has saved us from sin. This God that created light in the universe came to this earth to blot out sin from people’s hearts. We all inherited sin as the descendants of the first fallen man Adam, and as a result of this inheritance, we could not avoid

dying by being imprisoned in sin, confusion, and emptiness. Yet the Lord came to us, became the light in our hearts, and has saved our lives. In short, God has saved us from the sins of the world.

We should all experience true salvation by faith, realizing and believing that by allowing us to receive the remission of our sins, God has turned us into the light of the world. In fact, those of us who have received the remission of sin are the very light of the world. The Bible says that as God commanded to let there be light, there was light. This implies that God has saved us from sin through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is how we have been made righteous.

Many preachers sermonize, “My fellow believers, we must become the light of the world by living in holiness,” but it is not through our own effort that we are made righteous or turned



into light. Rather, it is when we believe in the Word of God exactly as He said, that everything is fulfilled exactly according to this Word. As God has saved us through the water and the blood, we have already become light. While there are both clear and cloudy days in our lives, we must all grasp the fact that we are light, that we have already become light.

## Human Beings Are God's Incomplete Works

*“God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light” (Genesis 1:3).* Like this, everything was fulfilled exactly according to how God spoke.

We, who have already become light by believing in the light of Truth, are living in this world as its light. We do not waver between the light and darkness, becoming light in this world

one day and then darkness on another day. No matter how insufficient and weak we might be, we are still light. This is a miracle. Our God is such that He recreates us, who are imperfect and finite, and completes us as His final work.

When God created the heavens and the earth, this whole universe and everything in it were also incomplete. This world was filled with darkness, confusion, and emptiness, and it had no life. The whole universe was a great chaos itself. Everything was formless, from the earth to the heavens and the stars.

However, as God commanded to let there be light, there was light, and in this way God brought order to all things and made them work in precision. It is God who made all the stars to orbit around the universe without clashing, and it is also God who made some stars clash with each other, thus extinguishing some stars while forming new ones. In doing so, God made it



possible for nature to maintain itself, establishing order so that everything would work as before even if a billion years were to pass by. As our Lord made an imperfect world and then perfected it, so did He likewise perfect us humans.

When God made us humans, he did not make us as completed works from the beginning. He made us imperfect out of dust. He made us as someone who could be tempted by Satan. In fact, He allowed us to be tempted by Satan, and it is after then that our Lord came and made us perfect. By shedding light on the formless dominion of the whole universe, God drove out all its confusion and organized it into a precise order. Likewise, the Lord, who is the light, came into our hearts that had fallen into sin and being confused by the depth of the darkness, and made us light.

*“So the evening and the morning were the first day” (Genesis 1:5).* God did not make us perfect

from the beginning. This is the providence of God that enables us to be born again. When God created this whole universe and made us, in all these things He had a purpose, and this purpose was for God to live with you and me in the Kingdom of Heaven forever, and to enjoy glory together with us. My fellow believers, do you now realize the reason why God created this universe and us humans? Do you now understand that God made you and me so that we would enjoy glory with Him and live forever? That is precisely why God made us be born unto this earth in imperfection, called us and saved us when the time came, made us His people and turned us into light from darkness, and enabled us to live forever as His own children.

This God has made us righteous. That is the recreation of God. That is the greatest miracle of all the works God has done to us human beings on this earth. By believing in the gospel of the



water and the Spirit, you have been washed from your sins and become God's children. Sinners have become righteous. This is the greatest miracle. As it is written, "*God said, 'Let there be light'; and there was light*" (Genesis 1:3). It is because God has saved us from all our sins that we have been made righteous.

We are now living in this world as the righteous. You may sometimes find yourselves insufficient and weak, but you are still righteous people. Isn't it the greatest miracle, that we who had been no more than piles of sin are now living as God's own children?

"*God saw the light, that it was good*" (Genesis 1:4). God is so happy to see us made righteous and transformed into light that His joy is beyond description. This is why there is a celebration in the Kingdom of Heaven when a single sinner realizes his sins, believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit bestowed by

Jesus Christ, and is thereby saved and become God's completed work (Luke 15:7-10).

The problem, however, is that as we carry on with our lives, far too often we are not aware of the fact that we ourselves have become light. Having made us light, God is saying that He is pleased to see us. While God is so happy, in reality we ourselves often fail to appreciate the fact that we have become light.

Those who, despite believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, still do not realize that they themselves are the light of this world should once again think about the Word. Those who think, "Something is missing for me to be light," even as they have been saved from their sins, need to reaffirm the gospel of the water and the Spirit once again. My fellow believers, as we carry on with our lives, we must realize how it was possible for us to become light, how we have become light, and believe in this fact. We



need to reflect upon ourselves to see whether or not we really believe that we are God's workmanship, and we need to thank God once again for making us light. By believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have become God's completed works. We are indeed the light of this world, and we give thanks to our Lord for enabling us to live in this world without sin.

## God Divided the Light from the Darkness

My fellow believers, as we read Genesis 1:3 that says, "*God said, 'Let there be light'; and there was light,*" we must have the belief that we have become light. And as the Bible continues to say, "*God called the light Day, and the darkness*

*He called Night*" (Genesis 1:5), we must grasp that God divided the light from the darkness.

God clearly separated the two. Those who have received the remission of their sins are light, while those who have not received it are darkness. Before God, those who have received the remission of their sins through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit are light. They are God's children, in other words. However, those who do not accept the gospel of the water and blood of Jesus Christ are darkness. The children of darkness are the Devil's children.

There are two kinds of people in this world. Although everyone was born on this earth in incompleteness, there are those who have become light by believing in the light illuminated by God, and then there are those who still remain as darkness in their refusal to believe. This light is none other than the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And before this gospel of the water and



the Spirit, everyone is divided into two kinds of people, either as a sinner or as a righteous person.

Those who accept this salvation that Jesus Christ Himself brought to us—that is, those who accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ—become God’s children. And as the children of God, they come to live their lives illuminating this world. When the time comes, God the Father will take them to His everlasting Kingdom.

However, those who do not accept this gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit into their hearts remain as the children of darkness. They become the children of the Devil. Night is when darkness is on the face of the deep. Do you like the night? This night is extremely dangerous. Think about a pitch-dark night, where there is absolutely no light. r. The dominion of the night is a world that

is utterly chaotic, disorderly, dangerous, fearsome, and blinding.

*“God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light” (Genesis 1:3).* God called the bright world day, and darkness night. We have to believe that God has separated the two. As it is written, *“You were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord. Walk as children of light” (Ephesians 5:8),* God has divided all people into His children and the Devil’s children. Everyone may seem alike at the outside appearance, but some people are God’s children while others are not. So to one kind of people, God says, “You are My children and My people,” but to others, He says, “You are not My children.”

And on the last day, the fate of these two kinds of people is sealed. Those who are not born again of water and the Spirit will be justly punished as the children of darkness. God said in the Book of Revelation that He would cast the



children of darkness into the lake of fire and brimstone, along with false prophets. The false prophets and their followers will all be thrown into the fire of hell. In contrast, however, the children who have become light will enter the Kingdom of God. Those who have become light by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit will enter into the dominion of light. God will enable them to enter and live in the everlasting dominion of light, in the Kingdom of God.

### ***“So the Evening and the Morning Were the First Day”***

Genesis 1:5 says, “*So the evening and the morning were the first day.*” A day in the human world begins with the morning and ends with the evening. The things of the world are ephemeral,

shinning for only a brief moment to revert back to darkness. The history of mankind is also like this. History shines but for a brief moment, only to be thrown back to utter darkness. However, God’s dominion is different. God’s dominion begins in imperfection at first, but it is eventually completed to perfection. The dominion of God is always like this.

The gate of the court of the Tabernacle was located in the direction of sunrise, to the east. Where was the Ark located then? It was in the west. The dominion of God begins imperfectly and ends perfectly. It’s how God works. That is why God says to humans that they must be born again. God is saying, “*Unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God*” (John 3:5). Though the beginning was incomplete, God completes to perfection.

Our lives of faith are also like this. Even after receiving the remission of our sins, we are still



imperfect at first. In other words, although we are saved, we don't really know that much, we feel as if nothing else has changed, and we aren't sure what is right. So once we are saved, we actually appreciate our imperfection even more acutely. That's because our lives must change, and we must live by faith. Before, we used to live just for our flesh and only by our own carnal strength, but now, if we rely only on the strength of our flesh, we will be accursed, and so we must rely on God, trust in Him, and live by faith. This is why we come to see our insufficiencies even more, and we get disoriented and struggle when we see our failing selves. Like this, our beginning is imperfect.

However, once we enter into the God-spoken dominion and live in it, if we live by faith, we will be perfected, though we may seem imperfect at first. God's works are always like this. Though in our eyes of the flesh we may seem imperfect,

when we believe in the Word of God, follow it, and enter into it, we will experience for ourselves that the life of faith is indeed perfect and complete. We know that this is how God always works.

If we were to summarize what God did on the first day, it is that you and I were made righteous—that is, we have become light. God has made us light, and He has made us live as light. I admonish you all to once again affirm this faith, that God has made us light.

Do you, who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, believe that you are light? God clearly divided the light from darkness on the first day. So anyone who still has not been born again from his sins, is darkness. No matter how much he might have disciplined himself, no matter how much his eyes might shine with wisdom, no matter how confident he might be of





himself, darkness is still darkness. His heart is undoubtedly all confused.

However, the born-again are now the light of the world. Because we have become the children of light in the gospel of the water and the Spirit by faith, we can discern everything. That's because the Holy Spirit in us speaks to us, teaches us, and guides us. The believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are always perfect, for the Holy Spirit dwells in them.

As we carry on with our lives, we should remember once again that we are the light of this world. That you and I have become light is the greatest of all miracles. Can anyone become light with his own deeds? No, it's impossible with his own deeds.

The only thing that enables us to be light is God's Word. Jesus Christ the Word came to us and said, *"Then God said, 'Let there be light'; and there was light"* (Genesis 1:3). No other

words are needed but this Word. When you go into a dark room and turn on the switch, darkness disappears the very moment the light comes on and the room is filled with the light. Likewise, because Jesus Christ took upon all our sins and blotted them out cleanly through His baptism when He came to this earth, if we believe in this light of Truth, our hearts are made sinless instantaneously and turned into clean light.

God is indeed powerful and almighty. God gave light to this dark world, to this world that was filled with confusion, emptiness, and darkness. As God commanded, "Let there be light," there sprang forth light and darkness faded away.

The salvation that we received thanks to the coming of Jesus Christ is like this. As He spoke, the perfect light came into being on this earth. By the Word of God, darkness disappeared once for all and there came to exist only light. As this God



who has saved us is omnipotent, all our sins were blotted out once for all by the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, the God-spoken Word of Truth.

It is also with the Word of Truth that the Lord promised to save us from sin and fulfilled it. This Word of covenant, that He would save us, was given when He cursed Satan. As He said, *“Because you have done this, You are cursed more than all cattle, And more than every beast of the field; On your belly you shall go, And you shall eat dust All the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel”* (Genesis 3:14-15).

Having thus promised mankind, when the time came, God was born of Mary incarnated in the flesh as the Seed of the woman, took upon all the sins of the world in the most fitting way by

receiving water baptism, and was condemned and shed His blood on the Cross. The divine Jesus who became a man met the requirements of the Law by bearing all our sins and condemnation through His baptism and blood, and by paying the price of death, He turned us, who had been slaves to the Devil and bound by him, into God’s own people—that is, He made us righteous. Christ made us God’s people and presented us to God the Father.

Just how perfect is this salvation? There is no imperfection in God’s works. He completed everything in perfection. God enabled us to become the children of light, so that we may lack nothing to become His own people. How truly amazing is God’s salvation? What a great blessing is it that we have now become the children of light, that we are light? Our salvation from sin came not by gold and silver that perish



away, but by the everlasting Word of God (1 Peter 1:23).

That the Word has made us righteous means that we have been made righteous by God. It is by believing in the Word of God that we have become His people. It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have received the perfect blessing. I give all my thanks to God.

At this hour, we once again give our thanks to God for making us light, for the fact that we are now light, that we have now been turned into light by God. God did not just command to let there be light only in this physical universe. Rather, to drive out the darkness that is in our hearts, God Himself came into our hearts as the light of Truth and made us righteous. Believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we should all thank God once again. ☒



## **The Water above the Firmament and the Water below the Firmament**

<Genesis 1:6-8>

**“Then God said, ‘Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.’ Thus God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament; and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. So the evening and the morning were the second day.”**

On the first day of His creation, God did the work of saving souls. In other words, on the first

day God made sinners righteous, and He also clearly separated the righteous from the sinners. And on the second day of the creation of the heavens and the earth, God divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. Put differently, this means that God divided His Word from the words of Satan.

## **The Water above the Firmament and the Water below the Firmament**

In the Bible, the spiritual meaning of “water” refers to the “Word of God,” and it also refers to the “baptism” that Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist, through which He accepted the sins of mankind. On this earth, there are those who spread the Word of God, and then there also are those who spread Satan’s words. That is why God divided all the waters on this earth into the



water above the firmament and the water below it. Through the things that God did on the second day of creation, He is saying, “In this world there are those who live by feeding on My Word by faith, and others who live by feeding on the words of Satan and spreading it.” As such, it is imperative for us to know how to discern whether those claiming to preach the Word of God are indeed God’s servants or Satan’s servants.

Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights (James 1:17). In contrast, every sort of wickedness comes out of the human heart. Therefore, when the light of the Word of God is shone, the true colors of the sinful are unveiled. The water below the firmament—that is, the words of the earth—refers to the teachings that came out of the human heart. That is why the

water above the firmament is separated from the water below it.

The water of this earth is fundamentally different from the water above the firmament. In other words, God is saying that every word that comes out of the human heart is the water below the firmament, while the Word of Truth that He spoke to us is the water above the firmament.

There are false prophets on this earth, but at the same time, there also are God’s servants, the true prophets. False prophets are those who say whatever comes out of their own hearts, without even looking at the Word of God. In the Old Testament’s time also, false prophets had prophesied according to whatever came out of their minds. So spiritually speaking, their teachings are the words of the earth, that is, the words of Satan.

However, it is still possible for Satan’s words to work in people’s hearts. So when we look at



those who are used by the Devil, we see them telling sinners to receive the Holy Spirit irrespective of the Word of God, or speaking in tongues, which are really nothing more than just gibberish that comes out of their own minds. When we listen carefully to what they say, we can easily find out that it's just a voice of the flesh coming out of their own thoughts and emotion. So it's a complete mess. It's so filthy that we can hardly continue to listen.

When we listen to what is said at a revival meeting in a prayer retreat, we the born-again can realize in no time whether the preacher with the Bible open is speaking the Word of God now, or just saying whatever is on his own mind. Many such preachers speak in complete irrelevance to the Bible. For instance, while telling the congregation to receive the Holy Spirit, they manipulate the mike to come up with some sort of sound effect, and shout out,

“Receive the fire!” Using a vocal band, they stir up the crowd's emotion and put them in a mass hypnosis. Would the crowd really receive the Holy Spirit in this way?

God says in the Bible, “Receive the remission of your sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit” (Acts 2:38). However, when we listen to the words of the servants of Satan, they claim that one is to receive the remission of his sins separately from receiving the Holy Spirit. They say, “All of you who believe in Jesus Christ are saints. But, from now on, you have to receive the Holy Spirit separately to become whole.”

But must one receive the Holy Spirit yet again after being born again? It is none other than liars' words to say so. Their teachings are not of the Word that is above the firmament, but they are the words that are below the firmament—that is, words that spring forth from the earth. Put



differently, they say what God never said, making it up all on their own.

Satan's words are always like that. When people say anything that is different from the Bible, it's all Satan's words. This is the nature of Satan's words: What Satan says is clearly not the Word of God, but he claims that his words are God's Word. None other than this is the very nature of the words of Satan. It is about pretending to preach the Word of God, only to deceive people in the end.

Those who preach the Word of God must preach it based on the written Word of the Scriptures. God's servants are those who preach what the Bible says exactly as it is. In contrast, Satan's servants say whatever comes out of their own hearts irrespective the Bible, thus leading countless people to destruction. Satan's words work through those who are not born again. And the words of Satan can work through those

whose faith is still immature, even though they believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

How, then, do Satan's words descend on people? First, I've already mentioned that Satan's words work in those who are not born again. It is those who are not born again that are the best suited to be used by Satan. So Satan stirs up devotion in them, changes their hearts, and makes them work hard, as if they were really laboring for the Truth, when in fact they are serving only lies. Satan makes people believe in the lies of the false teachers as the truth. It is through these people who are not born again that Satan works. He works through them so that rather than following the Truth, they would follow untruth.

That is why when someone leads his life of faith under a pastor who is not born again, he ends up turning into a servant of Satan himself. If this pastor does not believe in the gospel of the



water and the Spirit, and has therefore not been born again, then regardless of how he might believe that he is doing well in his own way, ultimately all his ministry is nothing more than Satan's work. As such, the pastor must first be born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

### **Satan's Work Is Manifested Not as Faith in the Truth, But as the Devotion of Man**

As a matter of fact, there are many pastors in this world who are doing Satan's work without even realizing. They are doing so much false work as Satan's servants. Although their work of Satan can heal illnesses and cast out demons, they bear sinners, for their followers still have sin

in their hearts. Their next work of Satan is to turn their congregations into legalistic believers, changing them to strive hard to keep the Law.

Before the Apostle Paul met the Lord on the road to Damascus, he had been utterly devoted to the Law. As the Pharisee among the Pharisees, he was extremely pious. His devotion even extended to persecuting and murdering Christian saints. Before the Apostle Paul was born again, when he was a young man, he even guarded the clothes of the people who stoned God's servant Stephan to death. He was someone who said, "I'll watch over your clothes; go ahead and stone him all you want!" In this age also, such devotion is found in the churches and homes where Satan is working. God makes His servants do His work quietly. In contrast, the Devil does His work with all kinds of clamor through his servants, by inciting their lust for glory.





Making people zealous is characteristic of the work of Satan. When we look at people used by Satan, we see how they all labor with only their own zeal. From attending morning prayer meetings for 70 straight days and overnight prayer meetings for 40 days to campaigning to read the entire Bible in a week, there are so many exceptional requirements to their work that it's a constant struggle keep up with them. Their lives of faith are a continuation of one slogan after another, of striving to do something on their own. But all that we really have to do is just pray to God placing our faith in His righteousness, with our hearts entirely relying on Him and trusting Him. Must we fast for 40 days for God to be pleased? Of course not!

However, because they are not the people who believe in the Truth and follow it, and because they therefore cannot trust in God's Word, they often seek after something special. They think

that if they are carnally zealous, God would somehow bless them. They try to be so zealous that we the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot follow the zeal of such people who are not born again.

Before I knew the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and before I believed in it, I, too, had been zealous beyond description. I used to gather the youths to clean the church inside and out, lead them out to the streets to bear witness, and then gather again in the evening for choir practice. This is how zealous I was before I was born again. Those who are yet to be born again before God are so zealous that it is imperative that we consider their misplaced devotion here.

Just because a Christian is devout, this does not necessarily mean that he is following the will of God. In other words, when we lead our lives of faith, we must first have the proper knowledge of what the gospel Truth of the water and the



Spirit is, and what the God-pleasing life is. For us to rely on the Word of God, seek its counsel, and come out to God is to fulfill the will of God. Following the Truth is to march forth trusting in the righteousness of God; it is not something that can be achieved by mankind's devotion.

Genesis 1:2 says, "*The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.*" This means that the Spirit of God works with the Word of God. All that there is for us to do is to understand what the Word of God is saying and follow it. God works in our lives when we seek His counsel, trust in Him, and follow Him, but in contrast to this, the devotion to mankind is like a marathon race without the finish line. There is no end to this, no matter how long one might continue with his devotion. It entails a constant exhortation to try just a little bit more and just a little bit harder, but all that results from this is a never-ending struggle to be a devoted believer.

The purpose for mankind's devotion is also to satisfy one's own lust. One would fall off a bicycle unless he pedals ceaselessly; just like this, so does the piety of mankind require one to run endlessly. This zeal tires and torments people exhaustively. Yet Satan still stirs them to be zealous, and ultimately drags them into hell. That is because far too many people follow Satan's words more zealously than God's Word.

One's zeal does not set the person free, but it makes the person weary. God said to us, "You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." In contrast, Satan says to people, "You just need some rough understanding of God's Word; what you really need is piety." Satan's logic is that if we are utterly pious to God, God would also be moved, just as "sincerity moves Heaven." As a result, people think, "Though I am a sinner, if I pray to God diligently, God will overlook it." This very thought is completely fallacious.



What can really be achieved just because we pray to God zealously? We must not emphasize only our own devotion. That is Satanic. Rather than living according to our own zeal, we must realize God's will and live according to this will of God.

However, the servants of Satan try to incite us to be zealous for the work of the earth. Next to extolling us to devotion, they try to turn us to complete ignorance, leading us to hell as know-nothings. That is why God said in 2 Timothy 3:6-7, *“For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.”*

In other words, Satan tries to trip people into ignorance. He tries to confuse them. God says that Satan brings ignorance to people so that they may remain completely oblivious, making them

learn constantly and yet never be able to come to the knowledge of the Truth. Satan makes them fall into ignorance and stubbornness, and this ignorance and stubbornness prevents them from reaching the knowledge of the Truth. It's Satan's strategy to make people ignorant.

Many Christians are also very zealous when it comes to bearing witness, preaching to others to believe in Jesus Christ. Satan's servants are quite diligent with their proselytizing efforts, for their zeal is great, and they lure those who seem weak. In other words, Satan claims that people should prosper if they believe in Jesus Christ, be healed from their illnesses, or succeed in their businesses, and by making such claims, Satan stirs up their desires and lures them according to his strategy. This is nothing more than a result of ignorance. That is why the Word of God says that the zeal of the ignorant can never reach the Truth. It says that even though those who stand



against God's righteousness are always learning, they cannot reach the knowledge of the Truth. Put differently, the ignorant who have not been born again can never reach the Truth, no matter how much they might learn from the servants of Satan. They may teach others everyday, but their followers still remain as sinners even after their teachings are over, just as they had been sinners when they first began to be taught.

The Lord said in John 8:32, "*You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*" So God is telling us to know the Truth. Like this, while the Lord tells us to know the Truth, in contrast, Satan tells us to be zealous.

What is God's righteousness? It's the Truth. What is the real Truth? The real Truth is the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that saves people's lives. As such, when one knows the gospel of the water and the Spirit, he can receive everlasting life. Satan, in contrast,

prevents people from reaching everlasting life by making them fall into ignorance. He tries to lock them in as sinners until the very end, so that they may be punished forever. That is why Satan's servants continue to spread the words of ignorance, to prevent people from reaching the knowledge of the righteousness of God.

Satanic faith is this: "*Having a form of godliness but denying its power*" (2 Timothy 3:5). The power of godliness refers to the gospel of power through which one is made righteous by believing in the righteousness of God. So, Satan makes people believe not in the righteousness of God but in their own righteousness, all the while pretending to believe in God's righteousness. While Satan's people may mimic as if they believe in the righteousness of God, they cannot receive the real power of godliness by faith. The Devil tries to prevent us from knowing the Truth that God has blotted out



all our sins. He tries to thwart us from realizing that we have now become completely sinless. All that Satan does is just make people put on only the outside appearance of godliness, as if they are believing in Jesus Christ. That is what Satan does, making people believe as if in Jesus Christ without a clear purpose and preventing them from receiving the remission of their sins.

In other words, Satan stirs up people to be zealous, making it impossible for them to reach the Truth, and by doing so, he leads countless Christians into ignorance to die in their own weaknesses in the end. This is Satan's work, making sure that people would still retain all their sins in their hearts even though they believe in Jesus Christ. What is so tragic is that such teachings of Satan are so rampant in today's Christianity.

## **We Must Separate the Truth from Falsehood according to the Word of God**

What God did on the second day of creation was to divide the firmament according to His Word. God commanded the water above the firmament to be divided from the water below the firmament; whatever God says is fulfilled accordingly. Here then, let us think about what it is "to divide" according to the Word of God.

God separates His Word from Satan's words. With what criterion does God divide the Truth from falsehood? As God said in Genesis 1:2, "*The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters,*" He is always working with His Word. Therefore, He is able to divide the born-again from those who are not born again with His Word.



When we reflect a certain teaching on the Word of God, and we see that it is not right according to the Word, then we can conclude that it is Satan's words. In other words, because it is God's Word of righteousness that we hear, believe, and keep in our hearts, when we reflect what people say to us upon the God-given Word, if it's not right, then we can judge it to be Satan's words. On the other hand, if it's right as reflected on the Word of God, then it is the Word of Truth manifesting God's righteousness.

Put differently, whatever teachings the righteous may come across, they can divide them into the Word above the firmament and the word below it. The teachings that come out of preachers' lips are either God's Word or Satan's words. If these teachings are not in agreement precisely to God's Word of righteousness, then we must ignore such teachings, no matter how systematic and finesse they might be, and no

matter how famous and authoritative the one giving these teachings might be. Words that do not contain the righteousness of God must be defined as Satan's words, not God's Word, and we must move away from them, even if they are preached as God's Word by a respectable denomination.

When we divide a certain teaching into the Word above the firmament and the word below it, the standard for this is God's Word of righteousness. When the people of this world hear someone speaking, they do not listen based on the measuring rod of the Word of God, but they judge looking only at his background, such as his power, wealth, fame, or education. However, based on this kind of standard, it is not possible to separate the Word above the firmament from the word below it—that is, the Word of God from the words of Satan. When we hear someone's words, if we open the Bible,



which is the Word of God, and listen based on this Word, we can surely distinguish Satan's words from God's Word.

As such, we should cast aside the standard of the world, and based on the Word of God—that is, the Bible—we should separate the Word above the firmament from the word below it. You, too, should free yourselves from confusion through the Word of Truth.

## Fallacious Doctrines Made by Satan

Some people claim that one is wholly saved only if he reaches sanctification after believing in Jesus Christ. In Christianity, such a claim is known as the Doctrine of Incremental Sanctification. In fact, along with the Doctrine of Justification, this teaching is one of the orthodox teachings officially sanctioned by the so-called

mainstream Christianity. However, this teaching did not come out of the biblically sound Word of Truth.

The arguments put forth by those who assert such a groundless doctrine is as the following. First of all, they, too, invoke the Word: *“And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose. For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified”* (Romans 8:28-30). Based on this passage, people make up and speak of the Doctrine of Sanctification as the “seven steps to spiritual maturity.” Referring to verse 29 in the above passage—“For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed



to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren”—they argue that as Christians get older, they are sanctified in the flesh as they gradually become more and more like Jesus Christ.

However, that is not what this passage means. When the Bible says that God made us be conformed to the image of His Son, this does not mean that we must conform to the Lord’s outside appearance. God predestined us beforehand and called us in order to give the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit into our hearts and make us believe in it, so that we may conform to the image of the Son of God by faith all at once.

Right now, the Holy Spirit of God dwells in the hearts of all those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is in the hearts of the righteous where the Holy Spirit abides. Therefore, it is those whose hearts are indwelt by

the Holy Spirit that conform to the image of the Son of God. God predestined us like this and called us to Jesus Christ, so that we may receive the remission of our sins once and for all.

As such, those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and who are indwelt by the Holy Spirit, are God’s children, and those who do not have the Holy Spirit are not God’s children. Yet despite this, many people have misinterpreted the passage from Romans 9:28-30, and as a consequence, they have come to believe and argue that one must be sanctified to holiness after believing in Jesus Christ in order to be completely saved. The doctrine of sanctification leads people by focusing on their carnal attributes, claiming that we must be as humble and meek as Jesus Christ Himself. So citing the passage from Romans, those who are





not born again expound on the seven steps of sanctification.

Romans 8:30 says, “Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.” Based on this passage, some people also assert the doctrine of predestination. However, the real meaning of this passage is completely different from the doctrine of predestination, which is no more than a man-made claim. That God called those whom He predestined means that God elected the entire population of mankind in Jesus Christ. When Adam sinned, God clothed him with the skin of a sacrificial animal; likewise, God decided to enable us to be completely remitted from all our sins through Jesus Christ, the descendant of the woman and our sacrificial offering. Therefore, the phrase “whom He predestined” refers to Jesus Christ and sinners, Adam’s descendants—

that is, to all who would come to receive the remission of their sins by believing in Jesus Christ.

As such, when the Bible says here, “Whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified,” it means that our God predestined all the sinners of this world to be called in Jesus Christ and receive the remission of their sins in Jesus Christ. And God calls those who have received the remission of their sins as the righteous, and He made them His own children clothed in all the glory of Jesus Christ. All of this is contained in God’s plan to make sinners His children. This is God’s law.

When the Bible says, “Whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified,” it means that God has called us humans and completely blotted out our sins through Jesus Christ. He has made us completely



righteous. And whom He called, He has also sanctified. Do you now understand this? All this happened simultaneously and once and for all.

From God's point of view, this required an elaborate plan and long-term implementation, but when we apply ourselves to what Jesus Christ had done for us, we have received all those blessings instantly: God called us sinners. And as God called us, Jesus Christ blotted out all our sins. Once we received the remission of our sins, we were made righteous, and as we were made righteous, we became God's children. That is how we became glorified. That we have been glorified means that as God has given the Holy Spirit, His image, into our hearts, sinners have now become none other than God's children. To become God's children is the very glory of being with God through Jesus Christ.

All of this happened in an instance. Since it happened all at once, to claim that one's

salvation is reached through the seven steps of sanctification is to utter Satan's words. The adherents of this doctrine insist that if one believes in Jesus Christ and walks diligently on the path toward sanctification while in this world, he would all of a sudden be transformed and become holy like God at his death. This notion is no more than man's own thoughts and Satan's words. The words of Satan bring nothing more than confusion and make people ignorant.

God called us with a plan in Jesus Christ, and for those who have answered this call of God, He has made them righteous once and for all and sanctified them all at once through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God has glorified us, so that we may become His children by believing in His righteousness. None other than this is the work of salvation and sanctification fulfilled by God once and for all. Therefore, it is not by their own efforts that human beings are made holy.



My fellow believers, after receiving the remission sin, do people actually become holier if they try? No, they are not made any holier. While our hearts have already been made holy by the righteousness of God, our flesh remains insufficient until we die. That is why the Apostle Peter said that just because we have obtained the affirmation of salvation by believing in the baptism of Jesus Christ, this does not mean that the filthiness of our flesh has disappeared, but that we have come to put on the righteousness of God by faith and follow His will from now on (1 Peter 3:21).

Therefore, it is only by our faith in the righteousness of God that we are to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. As we trust in God and follow Him, it is because we have the Holy Spirit in our hearts that we can carry on with our lives. It is just by following the Truth of God's Word indwelt by the Holy Spirit in our hearts that we

are transformed. And we can follow the Truth only by believing in the salvation completed by God. We cannot change ourselves through our own carnal efforts.

It is because Jesus Christ, God Himself, has already sanctified and glorified us that this has happened to us, as we trust our faith to believe in all this. As such, those who are not God's children, who are not born again, have been set apart from us the born-again, and therefore we are now living a life that is different from theirs. Those who are yet to be born again speak of the seven steps of sanctification and claim that someday they shall be like Jesus Christ. So they put up with any hardship and endure. They can endure all they want, but the fact of the matter is that one is not made holy by believing in Jesus Christ and then being refined for a long, long time to come. Since there is a limit to mankind's patience, far from being sanctified, they



eventually run out of patience and explode, turning even more stubborn and selfish in the end. The notion that one is sanctified in the flesh is nothing more than man's own fallacious thought.

Therefore, when we reflect on the doctrine of incremental sanctification based on the Word of Truth, it is revealed exactly as Satan's teaching. The longer one believes in Jesus Christ without being born again, the more is he hardened by his own stubbornness and hypocrisy. Such people may seem to be standing upright outwardly, but their hearts become utterly filthy. Even though their conscience, having failed to be born again, is always running toward sin, they still have to pretend otherwise. So how much more wicked is this? They are like a tomb, whitewashed with hypocrisy to look good only outwardly, but inside, darkness is on the face of the depth, and they are drowning in sin and rotting away. Given

this, their deeds of misleading and deceiving so many people are that much filthier and more wicked. That is why Jesus Christ Himself rebuked such people calling them as whitewashed tombs.

### **All That Satan Ever Said Is a Lie, and the More We Follow Such Words, the More We Realize That We Have Been Deceived**

Those who profess to believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior with a fallacious faith have only a form of godliness; they have no power of faith, just as the Bible rebukes them for "*having a form of godliness but denying its power*" (2 Timothy 3:5). Sinners are not capable of being truly godly. All that they have is an outside



appearance of the life of faith. They kneel down when they worship, and they put their hands together when they pray. They are good at such things. They also invoke holiness with their lips time after time, but their hearts are actually filled with greed and avarice, led by all kinds of lust. Seeing this, the Lord says of them, *“Having a form of godliness but denying its power.”*

For those who have not been born again, their hearts do not follow God, but the world. They try to be approved by the world and increase their worldly possessions, and as a result, their hearts have been completely defiled. In other words, their latter days are filthier than when they first believed in Jesus Christ. Our Lord makes it clear that for all those who profess to believe in God and yet have not been born again wholly, their end is filthier than their beginning. And the Lord says that their end will be even more wretched.

So Satan’s words are clearly discerned when reflected on the Word.

Those who still have sin in their hearts even as they believe in Jesus Christ have actually believed in the words of Satan. When a Christian can no longer follow the Word of God sincerely, even as he professes to believe in Jesus Christ, it’s because all this time he has believed in Satan’s words. If one truly believes in the Word of Jesus Christ, then it is impossible for him not to follow Jesus Christ. We follow the Lord, knowing that His Word is infallible. Of course, it’s still hard even for us, but we have no choice but to follow, and when we thus follow the Lord’s Word, our hearts are strengthened and rejoiced.

In contrast, when one follows Satan’s words, the more he follows, the more confused he becomes and the filthier his conscience turns. Such people claim to follow the Lord with their



words, but they establish their own doctrines even more zealously, which are nothing more than Satan's words, and as the doctrines are hardened, their followers' hearts become even filthier. Even so, they still pretend to live a virtuous life in deeds. And they deceive even themselves, claiming that as long as their deeds are virtuous, they are not filthy, even though there are all kinds of filth in their hearts.

## **The Righteousness of God Is Revealed through the Believers in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

In contrast, when the truly born-again Christians' hearts are misplaced, the Holy Spirit convicts their hearts long before. There are times when even our hearts as the born-again go astray,

and if we do not turn our hearts around, the Holy Spirit in us gets uncomfortable. So our hearts are not at ease. Our hearts react adversely. Then in no time, our hearts are tormented again. It's because our hearts get tormented that we cannot commit evil deeds so easily. When the born-again embark on a path, they can continue on this path freely only if their hearts are at peace. In other words, precisely because the Holy Spirit in us convicts our hearts, we cannot continue on a mistaken path, for our hearts feel uncomfortable and unhappy. This is what happens to the born-again.

In contrast, those who have not received the remission of their sins, and whose hearts are therefore not indwelt by the Holy Spirit, continue to follow Satan's words. That's because those who go forth by trusting in Satan's words wholeheartedly must move according to how their hearts are led by greed, and as such, the



Word of God cannot control them. Since the Christians who have not been born again are now drinking the water below the firmament, which is Satan's words, in reality, they are not any different from the people of the world who do not believe in Jesus Christ. That is why it's next to impossible discern today's Christians from non-Christians.

Those who believe in Satan's words live according to the lust of the world. Those who follow Satan's words are not any different from the people of the world. On the contrary, they may very well be even filthier than the people of the world. Since those who believe in Jesus Christ without being born again believe in Satan's words, they bear no spiritual fruit. They themselves remain as sinners, and there is no one who has received the remission of sin through them. The very people to whom they had preached the gospel still remain as sinners. That

is why for those who actually believe in the words of mankind and follow the words of Satan, even as they profess to believe in Jesus Christ, there is no fruit that pleases God. Through the Word, such people must all realize without fail that they had followed Satan's words all this time.

If you really believe that the Bible is the Word of God, then you, too, should examine your faith with God's Word. Are you following the Word of God? Anyone who does not follow the Bible is now following Satan. His teacher has been deceived by Satan, as he himself has also been deceived. Before the Word of God, he cannot hide this fact.

If one now realizes that he had followed Satan's words, then this person can now be freed from it. If one realizes that he had not followed the Truth, then he must first leave the false gathering that spreads Satan's teachings. Such



people, when they no longer attend a false church, can return to the righteousness of God in no time.

One must know the Word of God without fail and follow it with a clear understanding. For those who remain oblivious to the fact that they are feeding on Satan's words and continue to attend a church that has not been born again, only destruction awaits them. God has clearly divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. As such, if those people continue to follow Satan's words and drink only the water below the firmament, they will undoubtedly be separately by God. Therefore, when they do not return to God, and instead continue to drink the water below the firmament until the end, to be ultimately destroyed, it's not God's fault.

Considering this, if a Christian has no fruit of the Holy Spirit to show despite having believed in God for a long time, then he should realize

that he had believed in Satan's words, and seek after and look for the Word of God. God will meet him when he looks for Him. However, Satan's church that is not born again continues to bestow upon him a high position in the church, binding him tightly so that he may not go anywhere else. At some churches, pastors even hand out deaconships and elderships to those who have not only failed to be born again, but have not even attended the church that faithfully. So they over-issue church offices like this and hand out deaconships and elderships to their congregation, all in an attempt to satisfy their hearts with honor, since there is no change, nor happiness, nor any satisfaction to their congregation despite their guidance. When the pastors who are incapable of spiritually leading the saints correctly see their unsatisfied congregation, they invariably bestow upon their followers honors, for they cannot satisfy them





spiritually. So, if someone wants to bestow you with a church office even though your faith has not been properly established, you should realize that he is a false shepherd.

When the born-again Church establishes its offices, it does so based on whether the saints have faith in the righteousness of God and the gift of service, not on any other standards. The born-again Church does not assign a church office to anyone just because he has been attending church for a long time, or to please him. Rather, God's Church entrusts this person with a church office only if this person believes in the righteousness of God, and only when he is able to serve Him.

However, those who are not born again are ruled by the words of Satan, and therefore they try to satisfy people by offering them church positions. So, if some pastor wants to post you to a certain position in his church and give you

honor, even though there is sin in your hearts now, and therefore you are powerless and there is nothing you can do, then you should realize that Satan is deceiving you. You must realize clearly that this pastor is not a servant of God, and you must depart from such people. Only then can you yourselves be saved. None other than this is to divide the water above the firmament from the water below it. This must be clearly distinguished.

## **What Did God Do on the Second Day of His Creation?**

On the second day, God divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. Accordingly, we, too, must discern the words of Satan from the Word of God. How do we divide them? We divide the water above the firmament



from the water below it based on the Word of God.

We have to realize clearly whether or not we are now drinking the water below the firmament and our lives are controlled by the Devil. If you still have not become righteous even as you sincerely believe in Jesus Christ, then it can only mean that you are living drinking the water below the firmament, that is, the water of the earth. You have to realize that those who have become righteous without sin by believing in Jesus, and are living according to the Word, are those who live drinking the water above the firmament. The two must thus be separated clearly.

If one still remains as a sinner even after believing in Jesus Christ for half a century, then this can only mean that he had believed in the Devil's words all this time. In contrast, those who know the gospel of the water and the Spirit

properly, and who have received the complete remission of their sins by accepting the light of the Word, are the very people led by God. Such people are God's children on their way to the Kingdom of Heaven. Christians must discern clearly whether they are sinners or righteous, whether they are bound to hell or to Heaven, and whether they are God's children or the Devil's children. When we examine ourselves based on the Word, if we are righteous without sin, then we will enter Heaven as God's children, but if we have sin, then we will be cast into hell as Satan's servants. Like this, God divides us. God has done so clearly. God did not fail to do this. Yet even though God has clearly distinguished us and let us know it, some of us are still deceiving our own conscience.

When one looks at his conscience, he is clearly either a sinner or a righteous person. Whether we have heard the gospel and been born



again or not, whether we are saints or merely religious practitioners, whether our hearts have sin or not, and whether we clearly have the fruits of the Holy Spirit or not—all of us are either sinners or righteous people. We must determine ourselves clearly whether or not we are deceiving our own hearts, and we must discern ourselves whether we belong to God’s Church or to the Devil and the world. Anyone who hears the Word of God can know himself clearly, and so those who still deceive themselves with the words of Satan, abide in the water below the firmament, and drink this water deserve to be destroyed by God.

## **A Sinner Must Confess Himself as a Grave Sinner before the Truth**

We must realize that God has clearly divided the light from darkness, and the water above the firmament from the water below it. Do you realize that even though God has divided so, people continue to perish away by deceiving their own conscience? People cannot blame God for casting them into hell. That’s because if their conscience were to honestly recognize their hearts’ sins, and they were to really look for God and search for the Truth earnestly, then God would indeed enable such people to find the Truth.

The light is there in this world now. We clearly have the Word of Truth. Anyone who learns this Word correctly, sees it, listens to it, and is convinced of its truthfulness, can all be born again. Even the water below the firmament



can be transformed into the water above the firmament. Just as the water in the sea rises up to the air as vapor and comes down again as water, the water below can also rise up to the water above. Even though this is possible, people still deceive themselves, and that is why they are bound to hell and suffer needlessly. One must turn himself in to God and find the light. None other than this is confession.

The Lord will surely meet those who come before God, saying, “God, I am a sinner who drinks the water below the firmament. Lord, please save me.” Those who still have sin in their hearts should come before the servants of God, before His born-again Church, listen to the Word and receive the remission of their sins.

God has clearly divided the Truth from falsehood in people’s hearts. Sinners who drank the water below the firmament must never forget this, they must come into the born-again

gathering without fail, and they must be thus transformed without fail. Even though God has made this division, if one still deceives his own conscience with Satan’s teaching that claims, “If you believe in Jesus Christ, God will consider you righteous even if you still have sin,” and is consequently cast into hell, then you have to realize that this is entirely his own fault.

We have to grasp what it means when the Bible says that God divided the water above the firmament from the water below it on the second day. God has divided all teachings into His Word and Satan’s words, and now, depending on whose words we believe in, our blessings and curses are determined. What one drinks determines his happiness and unhappiness.



## Choose Yourselves

God has divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. Indeed, we can either drink the water above the firmament, or the water below it. The right to choose which water to drink is entirely ours. It depends on a person's choice. Those who prefer the water below the firmament would drink this water, and as a result, they will perish away and be destroyed. In contrast, those who want to drink the water above the firmament will drink this water and be born again, thus obtaining everlasting life. Everything will unfold exactly according to one's choice.

Whether one shall go to Heaven or hell also depends on his choice. Jesus Christ has already prepared Heaven, as He has made hell as well. Jesus Christ has done everything so that everyone would be able to become righteous. All

that remains is one's own choice: If one likes to remain as a sinner, then he would believe in Satan's words and remain as a sinner, but if he wants to become righteous, then he would believe in God's Word and be made righteous. In other words, Heaven and hell depend on one's own judgment and choice. It is on his own choice that heaven and hell rest.

God has already prepared everything. The only issue remaining is the question of which choice we would make. If we want to go to Heaven, then all that we have to do is just choose God's Word, drink the water above the firmament, and follow the servants of Jesus Christ; if, on the other hand, we want to go to hell, then we should just choose Satan's words, drink the water below the firmament, and follow the servants of Satan trusting in their words. Without fail, everything will be fulfilled before God exactly according to how we believe.



Sitting on the throne of judgment on the last day, God will say to sinners, “I told you from the beginning that I had divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. Yet by following Satan’s words, you chose on your own to believe in lies and to go to hell, and so it shall be so accordingly. It’s only fitting that according to your faith, you should go to where Satan is living.” Then those bound to hell will have nothing to say. They may have tongues, but they can’t say a word.

God has clearly given us the gospel of the water and the Spirit freely, the Word that enables us to be born again, the Truth, salvation, everlasting life, and all the other heavenly blessings. After giving us all these things, God gave us the option to take His blessings or His curses. God has separated His true Word from false teachings. Just as God divided the day from the night on this planet, so did God divide all its

water into the water above the firmament and the water below it. By making this division for all human beings who are to enter into the domain of everlasting life after living on this earth, God has made them determine their own fate.

God did not divide the day from the night for no reason. He did so because He wanted to show us the bright domain of light and the domain of sheer darkness. In other words, God has clearly divided the domain of the righteous from the domain of sinners. He has made this division so that those who want to go to hell only have to believe in darkness, and those who want to go to Heaven only have to believe in the light. What God has divided, no human can change. No matter how capable mankind may be, it cannot change the day into the night, and the night into the day. Likewise, no one can change what God has done.



One who has an honest conscience believes wholly in what God has divided as it is. It is by looking at the light and accepting it, by accepting the water above the firmament, the Word of God that descends from above, that we have received eternal life.

The water of the earth—that is, the teachings of Satan—extols us to strive for virtuous human deeds. This water that is below the firmament teaches us to become righteous and be saved through our own carnal efforts. None other than this is Satan’s words. If anyone teaches you that one is made righteous and saved through his own efforts, by living a godly life and being sanctified, remember that this is the very words of Satan. The Word of God says that we are made righteous by believing with our hearts in what God has all fulfilled, and accepting His Word into our hearts. To be made righteous has nothing do with one’s own deeds, but it is

achieved only by believing in the Word of God that descends from above. It is by believing in the Word above the firmament, in God’s Word of Truth, in His perfect Word that needs not be supplemented by any human deeds whatsoever, that we are to receive the remission of our sins, become righteous, and obtain everlasting life.

My fellow believers, God’s Word comes down from above, infallibly bears fruit on this earth, and rises up above again. If you believe in God’s Word, happiness will come to you, but if you drink the water below the firmament, you will be accursed. God does not want you to suffer and be accursed. That is why God has given us His Word, thus dividing the water above the firmament from the water below it. One who has tasted the water above the firmament can never drink the water below the firmament again.

Those who have only drunk the water below the firmament to this day should now return to



the Word of God. Those who have tasted only the water below the firmament must look for the water that is above the firmament, and they must now return to the Word of the righteousness of God, to true faith. ☒





## God Divided the Waters on the Second Day

<Genesis 1:6-8>

**“Then God said, ‘Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.’ Thus God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament; and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. So the evening and the morning were the second day.”**

As God commanded to let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters to separate water from water, it was done according to His

Word. God called this firmament Heaven. In today’s Scripture passage, God is explaining how on the second day of creation He divided the water that was under the firmament from the water that was above it. Originally, there was a single body of water that covered the planet earth, but God made a firmament and separated the water above the firmament from the water on the earth. Today, I would like to explain what is meant by this Scripture passage, and share God’s blessings with you.

As we look at God’s creation of the heavens and the earth, we can discover that He continued to divide on the second day as He had done so on the first day. The spiritual message of God’s work on this second day is the following: It is extremely important to discern God’s Word from Satan’s evil words. In other words, God is saying to us that we must have the faith that spiritually



separates the water above Heaven from the water of the earth.

When God created the heavens and the earth, He divided the water above the firmament from the water under it. He did so to tell us that if we were to have true faith, we must first drink the water above the firmament. We need to realize the spiritual meaning behind the reason why God thus divided the water. Only then can we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ has given us, and only then can we do God's work by faith. Put differently, today's Scripture passage tells us that unless we are able to discern and separate the Word of God from the words of Satan, we will forever remain unable to enter into the dominion of God.

## **Truth Must Be Separated from Falsehood**

If we are unable to separate the truth from falsehood, not only would we be unable to do God's work, but far worse, we will end up standing against God. That is why God is telling us about this issue. However, in today's Christianity, the so-called legalists and evangelicals still remain incapable of separating the truth from the falsehood, fallaciously believing in only their own, man-made doctrines. They need to realize that this is the most fundamental reason why they cannot enter God's dominion despite believing in God, because they believe in the water above the earth—that is, in the doctrines of man's own making.

The liars in today's Christian communities rely on and trust in these man-made doctrines far more than what God is actually saying in the



Word of the Scriptures. We need to realize that even now, a great deal of harm is being done by many Christian leaders who pretend to do God's work, because they are actually sharing their own carnal lessons mingled with the Word of God.

We must separate the spiritual Word of God from the lessons coming out of the flesh of man, and only then can we do God's work properly. For the servants of God, the weaknesses or insufficiencies of their flesh are not a problem. On the contrary, what is far more problematic for God's servants is when they try to do God's work without first separating the spiritual Word from carnal words. If one tries to do God's work without carefully considering and discerning the words of mankind from the God-spoken Word, then he ultimately ends up bringing spiritual destruction to souls that need not perish, not to mention destroying his own soul.

We who have become God's workers must preach the Word that God is speaking to us with a clear understanding. Why? Because that is the will of God. The water above the firmament and the water below it are fundamentally different. So God's workers must know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, separate false gospels from the true gospel, and preach only the gospel of Truth. Now, we are able to know exactly what the Word of God is saying to us through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. God's workers must therefore know the mystery of the gospel of the water and the Spirit properly, believe in it, and preach it to everyone by placing their faith in this gospel. Only then would every sinner come to know the Truth of the redemption of God, and through this, God will be glorified.

If we know and preach the mystery hidden in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, countless people will be able to receive everlasting life, for



they will be saved. Everyone who realizes and believes in the water above the firmament preached by us—that is, the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit—will definitely be delivered from sin and confusion. For this to come true, the servants of God must be able to preach the Word of the Spirit, separating it from the words of the flesh. Did He not tell us all that He has at once saved all the people of this world from all their sins through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit? God told us that it is by believing in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, the Truth that saves us from sin, that we can become His children. Therefore, we must know the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit clearly, and we must preach it to everyone by faith. We must separate the true gospel from false gospels, and placing our faith in the true gospel, we must preach it to all those who are yearning for God’s Truth.

Some people claim that if they just believe in Jesus Christ, they can be saved from their sins unconditionally without believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but this is not true. Those who do not know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit say, “One can be saved from sin just by believing in Jesus Christ blindly.” This is a lie. In reality, this is not the case. While the Devil doesn’t mind people believing in Jesus Christ, he still tries to lead them to destruction by preventing them from receiving the perfect remission of sin. It’s one of his most cunning schemes.

Satan is smart enough to use even the so-called “Church of God” to put people on a path to destruction in the surest way, by demanding legalistic faith from them and binding them under sin. The ultimate goal of the Devil is to have false gospels spread even in Christianity, so that even Christians would not know the gospel



of the water and the Spirit, and, in the end, all would be destroyed for their sins. As the wages of sin is death, the work of the Devil is a work of death too. The Devil is masterfully skilled at making countless people drift away from God's Truth, by having them hear only the words of the false gospels that satisfy the lusts of their flesh. This is where the ultimate purpose of the Devil lies. By knowing the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has given us, and by believing in it, we must all escape from the wicked wiles of the lying Devil and be saved.

As such, we should realize that the servants of the Devil have been feeding people's souls with the words of Satan mixed with the Word of God, thereby leading them to death. What has come out of this, from mixing the Devil's teachings with God's Word? Representative of this is none other than false gospels. Like this, as Satan's servants still continue to preach false gospels,

they are taking the lead to destroy the souls that need not die. This is Satan's work and what liars do. Satan is an expert at deceiving people. However, God makes it possible to be saved for those who hear the gospel discerningly, separating the true gospel from the false gospels. As such, God's servants must dedicate all their efforts to separate the Word of God from the words of the Devil. As we labor for God's work, we all need to realize why God divided the water above the firmament and the water below it in this way on the second day of creation.

## **We Must Build a Solid Foundation of Salvation for Our Lives of Faith**

Those who cause the most trouble for God's work are those who do it assiduously but recklessly, not knowing how to discern the Word



of God from the words of man. This, too, must be understood clearly. We need to realize that when those who call themselves God's workers preach the Word of God with the words of man, it turns into the greatest obstacle to God's work of saving souls. For the so-called servants of God to preach the Word of God mixed with the words of Satan is the greatest fallacy of their ministry.

For example, when they refer to the passage in John 13 where Jesus washed Peter's feet, they interpret and teach it to mean, "As the Lord told Peter that those who are bathed need only to wash their feet, so should we wash our sins everyday through our prayers of repentance." Through this passage, many false ministers might deceive naïve believers with their insistence on prayers of repentance. Indeed, had we not received the remission of our sins and been born again of the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, we would also have been deceived by the

liars prevailing in this age and have had no choice but to be bound to the place of destruction.

Those who have no spiritual discernment have misunderstood this and are teaching fallaciously that people must wash away their sins everyday. However, the servants of God who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit do not interpret this passage like those false preachers. They teach that when Jesus Christ was baptized by John the Baptist in the Jordan River, He bore all the sins of this world once and for all, went to the Cross, was crucified and shed His blood, and has thereby saved us from all sins once and for all.

Jesus Christ is the Savior who has washed away all the sins of this world once and for all with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Bible says that this gospel of the water and the Spirit is the Truth. Coming to this earth incarnated in the flesh, Jesus Christ completely



remitted away all our sins once and for all, from the beginning to the end, through the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. When Jesus Christ came to this earth, He was baptized by John the Baptist once; while thus shouldering all the sins of this world, He was condemned for our sins by being crucified and shedding His blood to death; and rising from the dead again, He has forever become the Savior of all those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

When Jesus washed His disciples' feet in John 13, He was speaking about the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the salvation of Truth, that He had already washed away all the sins of the disciples, even those that would be committed in the future. Yet despite this, countless people still do not realize the Truth of salvation, for they have not found God's true gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Those who feed only on the Word of God that is above the firmament refuse to drink the water that is below it. However, those who have drunk only the water below the firmament do not wish to drink the pure water that is above it. Jesus Christ said, *"No one, having drunk old wine, immediately desires new; for he says, 'The old is better'"* (Luke 5:39). In the real world, old wine is better. Anyone who has tasted old wine is very unlikely to want to drink new wine just brewed.

However, in the spiritual domain, it's completely opposite. When we look at the history of mankind, we can see that regardless of how long it might be, the philosophical and religious teachings that have come out of man's own thoughts are completely opposite to God's Word. No matter how aged or profound the philosophies and ideas of this world might seem, they are nothing more than crude, rubbish teachings, incomparable to the real Truth of



salvation that delivers people from sin, the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is the Word of God, is the true Word of life that delivers people from sin. Therefore, those who are wise are those who believe in the God-given gospel Word of the water and the Spirit over the traditional teachings of the religions of the world.

Regardless of how sincerely people might think of and believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior, unless they make the connection between the baptism the Lord received from John the Baptist and the blood He shed on the Cross, and place their faith in both, they are bound to be deceived by liars and perish. If this happens to us, then we are also bound to drift far away from God's blessing of everlasting life. It is indeed a curse for people to try to do God's work even as they themselves do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and have therefore not been

saved. They are actually ruining God's work, far from serving it. In other words, among today's Christians professing to believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior, if anyone does not have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then he is not doing God's work but Satan's work. Such pastors are not doing God's work, but rather, they are ministering diligently only to fill their own lusts. You must realize that it is not the many liars of this world who are doing God's work, but it is those who now believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that are truly doing God's work.

Many of today's Christians are unable to discern the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit from the words of Satan preached by liars, thus being deceived by Satan and led to destruction. So they must try to listen to the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is the Word of God. But for what kind of sermons are





the countless Christians of this world now looking? Are they looking for God's servants who preach the water that is above the firmament, or are they looking for the servants who preach the water that is below it?

Too many Christians are now looking for those who preach mixing the water above the firmament with the water below it. Had they received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they would have looked for the servants of God who preach the Word that is above the firmament. Right now, countless people who have not been washed from their sins, as they remain ignorant of the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, are still trying to lead a life of faith before God. However, those who are yet to be freed from their sins have been deceived by liars, and so all that they are leading is only a carnal religious life.

Even to this day, many pastors who call themselves as God's servants have been deceived by Satan like this, and as a result, they are only engaged in a futile and foolish ministry. But there is a clear difference of faith between such people's faith and that of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In the hearts of those who believe in a false gospel, not in the gospel of the water and the Christ Spirit, we see that there is no Holy Spirit dwelling within them. Although they do believe in Jesus as their Savior at present, the Holy Spirit cannot descend on them, for the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit is not in them. The reason for this is because they are still abiding by darkness, not knowing that the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit is the real Truth of the remission of sin.

In other words, it's because they still have sin in their hearts. In contrast, in the hearts of the



born-again who have been remitted from all their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, there is the Holy Spirit. So thanks to the Holy Spirit in their hearts, they can discern the words of man from the Word of God. As such, they can preach God's Word properly, and as they believe in the Word of Truth, they can also establish His Kingdom properly. The righteous can discern the words of Satan from the Word of God, and by this true faith, they can preach the real gospel of salvation.

Those who are covering the glory of God to this day are those who do not know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. They have nothing to do with God. They are so far removed from God. It is such a tragedy that there are so many such pastors around us. Although these people claim to be doing God's work out of their voluntary desire, they are actually doing Satan's work, not God's work. Far from doing God's

work, they are in fact blaspheming it, but the even more serious problem is that they themselves do not realize this.

One characteristic of such liars is the fact that they have no knowledge of the Truth, but are nonetheless very busy. Now, they must first believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of God. Now, they must listen to the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit flowing from God's Church. Now, the work of God must be entrusted to those who believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. And now, you must also serve the gospel of Truth united with the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If you claim to be doing God's work now, and yet you do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of Truth, then you must look for the gospel of the water and the Spirit even more, for you are spiritually blind.



Just as it is crucial to lay a firm foundation when building a house, for us to do God's work, we must first build our foundation of faith properly, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. One can go out as God's worker who saves others only after he himself is saved from his sins once and for all. If people throw all kinds of racket trying to become God's workers on their own without first being saved themselves, then in the end, their faith will just crumble down helplessly. For you to become people of faith before God, you must first receive the remission of your sins through the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, be saved from all your sins, and build your house of faith on the foundation of true faith, of true salvation. With the Word of God, we must first lay the foundation of salvation, of the true remission of sin, and then embark on the way of faith. It is such people who are wise before God. We should

all found the true house of salvation with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, and then partake in the building of the Kingdom of God.

Now, we must believe in Jesus Christ as our Savior, who came to this earth by the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, and we must walk with the Lord. Only then can we preach the Lord's gospel and walk with Him until the end. Even if it takes a while, we need to first lay the foundation of salvation firmly with the Word of Truth, and on this foundation build the house of faith solid as a rock. In people's eyes, it may seem rather protracted to lay the foundation of one's salvation and then begin his life of faith, but in the eyes of faith, we can see that this is wiser. We must build our house of faith with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. Now that we believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, we can all attain true salvation. And now that we have built our house of faith, of



true salvation, we can live in the Lord's peace, having nothing at all to fear anymore.

The reason why we, the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, must live in this world is to enable everyone to be saved from sin and become God's child. To do so, we must first lay the foundation of faith firmly with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and then do God's work. Only then can we escape from the judgment of sin no matter when Jesus Christ might return to this earth. However, those who begin their lives of faith without even believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are like someone who built his house on sand. God said that on the day of His judgment, one who built his house on sand will not escape from God's judgment, and its fall will be great. As such, we must all build the house of the true remission of sin by believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

On the second day of creation, the Lord made a firmament and divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. God called the space between the heavens and the earth as the firmament. Of the water that was covering the planet earth, God made some rise above the firmament, and He made the rest of the water on the earth to gather together into one place. It is with the water that is above this firmament that we must lay the foundation of our salvation and faith, and live our lives of faith. To what does the water above the firmament that the Lord spoke refer? It refers to the pure Word of God. Of all the Word of God, the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, more than anything else, is the water above the firmament.

Through the baptism He received from John the Baptist and the precious blood He shed on the Cross, the Lord has delivered us from the sins of the world and made us God's children. And the



Lord has also entrusted God's work to us, who have now become God's people by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and being born again from sin. Like this, God has given us His Kingdom, His blessings, and His love as well. God blesses those who have been freed from their sins and made righteous by drinking the water that is above the firmament. This blessing, however, is beyond the reach of those who did not drink the water above the firmament. On the contrary, the opposite will happen to them.

Now, we must believe that God has saved us from the sins of this world through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and we must preach this. Jesus Christ has saved us from all the sins of the world through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When we lay the foundation of faith that saves us from all our sins, we must build it with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and we

must also preach this Truth to others, leading them to believe in Jesus Christ who came by the water and the Spirit, and to praise God's light of Truth.

On the other hand, those who have not laid the foundation of their salvation with the water that is above the firmament will turn into the children of destruction. No one can be saved from all his sins unless he drinks the water above the firmament, no matter how wise and knowledgeable he might be. Some people claim that they have been saved from sin just by believing in Jesus Christ's blood on the Cross alone, but their own conscience knows it better that this is not the case. Because such people believe in Jesus Christ without separating the water that is above the firmament from the water below it, they believe in Jesus Christ only in vain. In some Christian gatherings, people speak as if they believe in the gospel of the water and



the Spirit. But when we examine their teachings in detail, we can see that they are actually preaching to people by mixing the water above the firmament with the water below it. Such people are not believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. They are nothing more than tares before God.

There still are God's servants in this world, saving people from sin through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. However, there also are countless liars in the world, putting together Satan's gatherings and misconceiving themselves to be doing God's work. Let me make it clear to you: Those who have not received the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit are all liars. Those who believe only in the blood of the Cross as their salvation and preach so are all liars who are deceiving everyone, themselves and others alike. Almost everyone throughout the whole world believes only in the blood of the Cross and

claims this to be salvation, but such people have not been actually saved, nor do they have any conviction of their own salvation, for they do not have the gospel of the water and the Spirit in their hearts. The Bible says that the gospel of the water and the Spirit alone is the definitive gospel of Truth. Nothing else in this world can be the Truth of salvation but the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord.

I know a thing or two about the mainstream theology that is widespread throughout the world. However, when ones researches theology, he cannot find the gospel of the water and the Spirit in it. It's all water below the firmament. All theologies are premised on the notion that "one is saved just by believing in Jesus Christ's blood on the Cross alone," and on this foundation each denomination makes different assertions. However, of all the theologians, I could not find anyone saying, "I have now become sinless, for I



have been truly and completely washed from my sins with the blood of the Cross.”

If there were a handful who said so, they claimed to be sinless only doctrinally. However, they were still no more than religionists who had to receive the remission of their sins constantly on an on-going basis, not the true Christians who knew and believed in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

The many Christians that are in this world are only different from each other in their chosen denominations; they all have nothing to do with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. Even at this very moment, countless people think that their sins are blotted out just by believing in the blood of the Cross alone, but that is not the case. For such people also, only when they believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit are all their sins blotted out once and for all; otherwise, their sins will never disappear.

The Word of the Bible clearly says to all of us that we must receive the remission of our sins through the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. That is why I believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and why I am testifying to you of the water that is above the firmament. It is when you hear this gospel of the water and the Spirit with your ears and acknowledge this gospel of the remission of sin with your hearts, that true salvation is brought into your souls. If you now believe that you have been saved from your sins only through the blood of the Cross, you should stop deceiving your own conscience, come before God, and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

There is no other place but only God’s Church that is now preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit on this planet earth. There is no other gathering in this world but only God’s Church that is a gathering of those who have been born



again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. As God's servants in this world are now preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit clearly and enabling people to receive the remission of their sins, you really must not miss this opportunity to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If you believe only in Jesus Christ's blood on the Cross, then while you may be able to become worldly religionists called as Christians in name, you will not be able to become true Christians. If you reject the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you can never escape from your sins for eternity. There is no other way to escape from sin once and for all but to believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. I admonish you all to realize this through faith. That's because God never says to the sinful, "You are righteous, and My people," nor does He write their names in the Book of Life.

One attribute that is common to all heretics in Christianity is that they preach by mixing the water that is above the firmament with the water below it. In contrast, the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit proclaims that all the sins of this world were passed onto the head of Jesus Christ once and for all when He was baptized by John the Baptist. All our sins were passed onto the body of Jesus Christ at once through the baptism of John the Baptist that He received, but despite this, people ignore this Truth and are trying to be saved from sin by believing only in the blood of the Cross, and that is why they cannot be truly saved. They believe in Jesus Christ all in vain.

It is because we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we are baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit after we are saved. We the believers are baptized in water as a mark of our faith, believing that by





being baptized by John the Baptist and shedding His blood, Jesus Christ washed away all our sins once and for all and bore all the condemnation of sin. It is as a mark of our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we are baptized in the same way as Jesus Christ was baptized. We are expressing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with this ritual. We are baptized in the name of Jesus Christ as a mark of our faith, indicating this is how we believe.

Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot be with those who do not believe in it. The Bible says, *“Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness? And what accord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has a believer with an unbeliever?”* (2 Corinthians 6:14-15)

God’s Church is a gathering of the saints who have received the remission of their sins and become holy by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit (1 Corinthians 1:2). So those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot be part of God’s Church.

The saints’ foundation of faith must not fall. If our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which forms our hearts’ foundation of salvation, is destroyed, then we cannot have Jesus Christ dwell in our hearts. Jesus Christ has become the Savior who has given us the salvation of the remission of sin all at once. Coming to us by the water and the blood, the Lord has blotted out all our sins once and for all. That is why we are living by faith, sitting on the foundation of the faith of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of the remission of sin, that Jesus Christ has laid down in our hearts. However, if our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is



the foundation of salvation, falls apart, then we have no place to put our bodies and hearts. The hearts of the righteous have no other place to dwell but the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and so without this gospel, they would end up lost.

For Jesus Christ to become your true Savior, you must build your house of faith firmly on the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Word of God. If you fail to do so, then your lives of faith will invariably turn into a failure. If you lay the foundation of your faith on your own prayers of repentance, this faith will wobble all the time. Is your faith made whole when you live your lives of faith trusting only in the blood of the Cross and giving your prayers of repentance? No, such a faith is bound to shake constantly. That is why we must believe in the water that is above the firmament—that is, in the gospel of the water

and the Spirit—as the Truth of the remission of our sins.

Those who hear the words of man without discerning them from the Word of God are bound to drift away from God. So we must infallibly separate the Truth from falsehood, and believe in what is true. Those who believe without separating the Word of God from the words of man will perish. Therefore, we must invariably separate the Truth of salvation from falsehood, discern it clearly, and believe in the Truth alone.

My fellow believers, can our sins be washed away without the baptism that Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist? No, the sins of this world can never be washed away without the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ has given us. How can we believe that this world's sins are washed away without the gospel of the water and the Spirit? As Jesus Christ took



upon all the sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist, shed His blood as its consequence, and has thereby fulfilled the righteousness of God, those who believe in this Truth with their hearts have been washed from all their sins once and for all. Even though we still commit sin everyday, because we believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, not in our own prayers of repentance, our sins have been all washed away completely. How else could the sins of this world be washed from your hearts? Seen through our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our sins were washed away once and for all, and so the fact that our sins were washed away is in the past tense.

It is because we have faith in the baptism of Jesus Christ that all those countless sins in our hearts were washed away once for all by faith. Jesus Christ was baptized by John the Baptist (Matthew 3:13-17). The word “baptism” first

means “to wash.” All our sins were washed away cleanly through the baptism that Jesus Christ received. The word baptism also means “to bury,” and so because Jesus Christ had been baptized by John the Baptist, He could die at once on the Cross, saying, “It is finished.” Therefore, whoever believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit had died with Jesus Christ and was spiritually resurrected with Him by faith.

In the Old Testament, when Aaron the High Priest laid his hands on the sacrificial lamb, all the sins of the people of Israel for an entire year were passed onto the lamb of sacrifice. Just like this, when Jesus Christ was baptized from John the Baptist, all the sins of mankind were passed onto Jesus Christ once and for all. And Jesus Christ bore the condemnation of sin in our place. Without the baptism that Jesus Christ received



from John the Baptist, we could never be remitted from the sins of the world.

Like this, in chapter 1 of the Book of Genesis, God is already testifying about the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is the water above the firmament. We have to clearly separate the water that is above the firmament from the water that is below it, and we have to believe only in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the water above the firmament.

Jesus said in Matthew 7:21-23, *“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?’ And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!’”* On the last day, there will be countless people who, despite

believing in Jesus Christ ardently, must be cast into hell.

A while back, I planted a church in a port city called Changwon located on the southern coast of Korea and ministered there. I rented a place on the third floor of a large building located in the commercial district and began my ministry. Because I was new to the city, I didn’t even realize that there was another church using the same name as the church that I planted.

One day, a pastor and his wife came to see me late in night. When I asked them, “What brings you here?” the pastor said, “Excuse us, but I am the pastor of so-and so church, and I came here with some words of admonishment, as a new church has sprung up with the same name as my church.” The pastor explained to me that he had already been ministering with this church name for a long time, and that another church using the same name would cause much confusion, such as



the mail being delivered to an incorrect address. So He asked me to change the name of my church.

So I asked him back, pointing out that the address and the denomination were different. I said to him, “I can see how some people might get confused if the denomination were the same, but since the address and the denomination are different, wouldn’t it be clear enough, with nothing to be confused about? Look out there at our sign. Aren’t our address and denomination different from yours?” But this pastor began to show his stubbornness and kept insisting, “Still, you have to change the name of your church.”

After talking with this couple for some time in the church, I invited them to my office. Serving them tea, I said to them, “I will give some more thoughts to this issue. I will change the name if I decide it would be better, but in that event, I will have to ask you for compensation. If the name of

my church is changed, its sign has to be changed and new pamphlets have to be printed. It takes a lot of work and substantial costs to inform others of our change. Can you compensate for all this? But that’s something that I should decide after some more consideration. Anyway, do you have sin, reverend? ”

Somewhat bewildered by my sudden question, the pastor answered, “I have no sin.”

I asked him again, “How is it that you have no sin?”

“I have no sin because I believe in the blood of Jesus Christ.”

“Do you then not commit sin again? Are you still sinless, even if you sin again?”

“I still have no sin.”

“When you commit sin, then, do you not give prayers of repentance?”

“I do.”



“You just said that you have no sin, and yet do you give prayers of repentance whenever you commit sin? How do you then pray when you repent? Do you ask God to wash away your sins, or do you just thank Him for having washed them?”

“I ask Him to wash them away, of course.”

“Isn’t this then the evidence of the fact that there is sin in your heart? You may have stepped into my church to discuss the problem of its name, but you really shouldn’t return empty-handed like this.”

From then on, I explained the gospel of the water and the Spirit to them in detail, and although it took some time, the pastor and his wife came to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. So they decided to end all of their past ministries and serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and they asked me to guide them. Unfortunately, however, I heard that the pastor

eventually joined a gathering of those who believe only in the blood of the Cross, and as a result, the correct foundation of faith all crumbled down. Even though with the Word of God I had separated the water above the firmament from the water below it for this pastor, Satan mixed the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the pastor received with a false gospel, and completely sank his faith.

God does not approve just any gospel. We must grasp what it means when the Bible says that God separated the water above the firmament from the water below it, and we must follow it by faith. We must now realize that if we say that just about any gospel is right, then spiritually speaking, we will end up sinking completely. The weakness of our faith is the problem, not the Word of God; God’s Word of Truth is perfect and unchanging. God’s Word is true and complete. So given this, human beings



cannot implicate God's Word to be contradictory, just because they are weak. Rather, they must only believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The Lord said, *"I am the way, the truth, and the life."* The Word of God is the Truth. What the Lord said is the Truth. It is the life. It is the way. A particular attribute that is common to all liars is that they never preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but are only obsessed to draw more and more people into their fold. To do so, they only preach what suits people's carnal mind. They teach that if their followers just believe in Jesus Christ and are faithful to church, they will be blessed to prosper and live a healthy and long life on this earth.

However, we must not preach to people the water that is above the firmament by mixing it with the water below it. If we do this, it will not be possible for them to be born again, remitted

from their sins. The liars are claiming themselves to be God's people only as a matter of doctrine, when in fact their sins still remain in their hearts.

Those who have now received the Holy Spirit by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are able to know even the profound depth of God through the help of the Holy Spirit, and so they can see people's hearts revealed clearly by the Word of Truth. When we examine people's hearts with the true Word of the water and the Spirit, we can also find out whether there is sin in their hearts or not. Since God has given faith, wisdom, and spiritual discernment to those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we can easily find out whether someone is a sinner or a righteous person just by looking at his eyes and having a short conversation with him. All that it takes for us to discern whether someone has been saved or not is to just ask him



to explain how he has been saved, and listen to his explanation.

As such, we know people's spiritual condition by believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. In contrast, however, those who have not separated the water that is above the firmament from the water below it are incapable of discerning what is true from what is false.

That is why it is so important to understand this water that is above the firmament, believe in it, and preach it to others. The water above the firmament must be clearly separated as the water that is above the firmament, the water below the firmament must be clearly separated as the water that is below the firmament, and they must be preached accordingly. We must preach the gospel with discernment, separating the gospel of the water and the Spirit from the other gospels. We have to divide the Devil's words from God's Word, preaching only the Word of God. We

must never mix what is true with lies. God says, "*You shall not sow your field with mixed seed*" (*Leviticus 19:19*). As God commands us not to sow a field with mixed seed, we must clearly preach only the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we believe. We must preach only the written Word of God.

Some people ask, "Does this then mean that the washing of our sins is achieved only through baptism?" Mankind's sins are washed through the baptism of Jesus Christ and His blood on the Cross. However, it is through the baptism that Jesus Christ received that some people have all their sins cut off from their hearts and passed onto Jesus Christ, and it is through His blood on the Cross that these sins are condemned. Does God, then, also say so in the Old Testament? In the Old Testament also, God speaks the same Truth. All the Word of the Old Testament is a shadow of the Word of the New Testament. The





shadow of the baptism that Jesus Christ received in the age of the New Testament is the circumcision in the age of the Old Testament. In the Old Testament's time, those who were not circumcised were not qualified to eat the Passover lamb (Exodus 12:48). Anyone who wanted to eat the Passover lamb had to be circumcised, even if he was an Israelite. Those who were not physically circumcised were not qualified to partake in the Passover.

This rule applies equally to the New Testament. We cannot enter the feast of Heaven unless we are born again. And we are born again from all our sins only if we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Lord said that it is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we can be born again from our sins and enter the Kingdom of God.

That is why everyone must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, be washed

from their sins, and be born again. We must believe in the gospel, that the Lord has saved us from the sins of the world through His water and blood. The gospel Word of the water and the Spirit is clearly the Word that is above the firmament. Yet despite this, today's Christians have no desire to know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, far less believe in it. It is because Christianity to this day has refused to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord that it has been corrupted. As such, every Christian must repent and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Why has Christianity throughout the whole world become so desolate? It's because it has failed to believe in and preach the water that is above the firmament. In other words, it is because people believe in the water that is below the firmament, and because they have preached it mixed with some Word of God, that virtually all



souls have become so muddled. Countless people profess to believe in Jesus Christ and dogmatically claim to be sinless, even as they still have sin. As a result, this world is filled with so many Christians pretending to be faithful believers, even as their faith is a legalistic one.

On the first day, God saved sinners through the light of life. On the second day, God set apart those who have been saved from sin—that is, He divided the water above the firmament from the water below it. When God first created the heavens and the earth, the whole world was covered with water, but God lifted up some of this water to Heaven. So there came to be a space called the firmament between the waters.

Do not underestimate what God has done. His Word is the Truth. How wonderful would it be if everyone drank the water that is above the firmament? Had everyone drunk this water, everyone would have become righteous.

Moreover, today's Christianity would really have become the Kingdom of Christ. If we the righteous continue to live in this world, the world will change. Do we the righteous practice evil? No, we do not practice evil. No righteous person ever practices wickedness.

In contrast, just how much evil do the Christians who are not born again practice while living in this world? They practice evil so much that even non-Christians are sick and tired of them. Why is this so? It's because they have failed to drink the water that is above the firmament by faith. It's because they have been deceived by liars and have drunk mixed water.

The Bible makes it clear that those who preach the water below the firmament mixed with the water above it are not God's servants. Anyone who drinks the water above the firmament mixed with the water below it will end up dying. It is only through the water that is above the



firmament that God has saved us from the sins of the world. And He nurtures us by bringing rain from above. If one really wants to attain everlasting life, he must drink the water that is above the firmament. If he instead drinks the water that is on the earth, he will end up perishing spiritually.

God has saved us from our sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and it is in this grace of salvation that we are now living. God has given us everlasting life, He has bestowed us with the spiritual blessings that belong to Heaven, He has made us His workers, and He has entrusted us with “the ministry of reconciliation” (2 Corinthians 5:18), so that we may be more than able to do His work.

I give all my thanks to God over and over again. Without fail, we must all preach only the water that is above the firmament, and we must also clearly condemn the water that is below

firmament as the words of the Devil. We should all live our lives thanking God, trusting only in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Since our Lord is the God who came to us by the water and the Spirit and saved us, anyone who believes in Him has already received the gift of salvation. As such, we must always cherish this Word in our hearts, and we must live in the true will of the Lord. Now, then, let us all live properly by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

On this planet that was covered with water, God divided the water into two separate distinctions. So the water above the firmament is different from the water below it. This implies that among the words preached by people, there is the Word of God, but there also are Satan’s words. In other words, God speaks to us with the true Word of the water and the Spirit, while Satan is only lying. It is absolutely indispensable



for us to know how to discern what is God's Word and what is not from the words preached by people.

“Let it divide the waters from the waters.” In the Bible, water refers to the Word of God. The Spiritual Word of God comes from above. And God's Word comes from the written Word of the Scriptures. In contrast, the water on the earth flows from people's carnal hearts. The fundament origin of the words of the earth lies in the lust of the flesh flowing out of the human heart. The Bible says that the words that come out of people's hearts are Satan's words, while the Word that came out of the lips of God is the water of Heaven. Therefore, on this earth, there coexist both the words of false prophets and the words of true prophets. This is the very implication of God's separation of the water above the firmament from the water below it.

In the age of the Old Testament also, false prophets prophesied lies out of their own hearts (Ezekiel 13:2). Satan's words can work in people's hearts through wickedness and lies. When we look at those who are used by Satan as his instruments, we see how they lie according to their lustful desires in their hearts. They consider the Holy Spirit as if He were an object, and so they tell lies, demanding their followers to receive the fire of the Holy Spirit, or likewise assert such weird nonsense out of their hearts. When we carefully listen to what they say, it's all about what came out of their own hearts. It's so fallacious and filthy that we can hardly bear to listen. When we go to a prayer retreat or attend a revival meeting, while the preacher might have the Bible open, most of the times we can't even tell if he is talking about the Bible or what's in his heart. Such preachers give sermons that are completely irrelevant to the Bible.



Mobilizing all kinds of instruments, from a huge choir to a rock band and giant speakers, they first fill the souls that have not even been born again with their own emotion. After then, they tell the congregation to receive the Holy Spirit, and using a mike to mimic the sound of wind, they shout, “Receive the fire!” This, however, is nothing more than throwing the crowd into a group ecstasy by stirring up their emotion. In contrast, God says in the Bible that one receives the Holy Spirit as a gift when he receives the remission of his sins. Even though the Bible says the gift of the Holy Spirit is received when one receives the remission of his sins (Acts 2:38), instead of preaching accordingly, they blindly claim that the Holy Spirit is received unconditionally. This is why they are so wrong. Many people believe that they can receive the Holy Spirit just by asking, irrespective of receiving the remission of sin.

This, however, is an absolutely fallacious belief. You must receive the gift of the Holy Spirit by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and receiving the remission of your sins.

False prophets lie all the time just to fulfill their own hearts’ lusts. Such words that spring forth from the earth are their teachings. In other words, these liars make up their own Word of God, attributing to God what He never said. Since they speak differently from the Bible, they are all liars. To utter the words of Satan is to come up with what God never said and embellish it to be His Word. This is what Satan’s words are. And those who spread them are Satan’s servants.

We should read the Word of God written in the Scriptures, and preach this Word by faith. We must believe in the Truth written in the Word of God, and spread it by this faith. In contrast, when someone who is not born again speaks out of his



own heart, he is speaking the words of Satan. Through whom do Satan's words work? They work through those who have not been remitted from their sins. And Satan can also work through those who are weak, even if they have been born again from sin. In other words, Satan's words can work in people through those who are spiritually immature. As mentioned, Satan also works through those who are not born again, and these people are in fact the best instruments for Satan to use.

So Satan leads those who are not born again to be devout, bestows them with the gift of deception, and through this, he can throw many people into confusion. When Satan incites some suffering in the heart, he can work through those who are not born again. Through those who are not born again, Satan can work to ensure that people would follow the wide way. When we look at the believers who are under the pastors

that have not been born again, we can see how they are all filled with the words of Satan. Everything that the churches led by them do is Satan's work. Therefore, it is the pastors who must be born again first.

## **The Truth Must Be Clearly Separated from the Falsehood**

God also continued to divide on the second day of creation. How did He divide? He divided His Word from the words of Satan, and He divided His fruits from the fruits of Satan. If someone still has not been made truly righteous even as he believes in Jesus Christ, then we should realize clearly that he is someone who is still drinking the water of the earth and is controlled by the Devil. If one still remains as a sinner even after believing in Jesus Christ for 50



years, then this is because he has believed in the Devil's words. In contrast, those who have been made righteous by believing in Jesus Christ and receiving the remission of their sins into their hearts, and who continue to live according to the Word after believing in Jesus Christ, are of those who are drinking the water that is above the firmament.

These two types of people must be separated from each other clearly. It must be distinguished clearly whether one is a sinner or a righteous person, whether he is bound to hell or Heaven, and whether he is God's child or the Devil's child. The righteous will enter the Kingdom of Heaven, but sinners will be cast into hell.

God divides all human beings into two different groups. He has done this clearly. Yet even as God has clearly done so, many people still deceive their own conscience. When one looks at his conscience, no doubt he is one of the

two. It must be clearly distinguished whether or not one has been born again by hearing the Word of God, whether he is a saint or just a religionist, whether there is sin in his heart or not, whether he has the fruits of the Holy Spirit or not, and whether he belongs to God's Church or Satan's gathering.

### **For Us to Be Saved from Our Sins, We Must First Confess Ourselves Properly**

All of us must realize that God has clearly divided the Truth from the falsehood. We need to realize that it's because people have deceived their own conscience that they are perishing, even though God has thus separated the Truth. God has made it impossible for people to blame



Him for sending them to hell. That's because if people really look for God and are honest before His Word, then God will infallibly meet all such people through His Word of Truth. When one looks into his heart honestly through the Word of God, he can clearly find out to which group he belongs. So those who pursue illusions deceived by themselves, and who are destroyed as a result, have no excuse.

There now is light in this world. There now is the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit in this world. We have the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. If you learn about this Word accurately, see it, hear it, and believe in it with full conviction, then you, too, can be freed from all your sins. That is a fact. Even the water that is below the firmament can be changed into the water that is above it. Just as the vapor from the sea rises up and comes down again as rain, the

water below can also be changed into the water above.

Yet despite this, despite the fact that one can be changed like this, people still deceive themselves, and that is why they continue to abide in darkness and are bound to be condemned for their sins. Every sinner must turn himself in to God as a sinner, believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and find the light. None other than this is the proper confession to make.

1 John 1:9 says, *"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."* You, too, must believe in this Word; confess, "Lord, I have sin in my heart. I am a sinner who has been drinking the water below the firmament. Please save me, Lord"; come before the servants of God and His Church; hear the Word; and receive the remission of your sins.





God continued to divide on the second day. He divided the water above the firmament from the water below it, separating His Word from Satan's words. We should never forget the fact that God has separated true faith from false faith. God has clearly divided the Truth from the falsehood in people's hearts. The sinners who have drunk the water below the firmament must infallibly come into the gathering of the born-again saints and be transformed. Even as God has clearly separated and opened the way of life, if people still continue to deceive their own conscience and are cast into hell, we should realize that this is entirely their own fault. Depending on what kind of word we believe in and follow, our blessings and curses, and our happiness and unhappiness are all decided.

## **One's Salvation from Sin Depends on His Own Choice**

One can believe in either the water above the firmament that God divided, or the water below it. It is up to the person. Those who are attracted by the water below the firmament and follow it will drink this water and, as a result, rot away and perish. One's destiny will unfold according to his own choice.

Will we go to Heaven, or will we be cast into hell? Jesus Christ has already prepared both Heaven and hell. He has also fulfilled abundant salvation, so that everyone may be made righteous. If one prefers to remain as a sinner, then he will believe in the words that are incapable of blotting out his sins—that is, in the water that is below the firmament—but if he wants to become righteous, he will believe in the Word of God and drink the water that is above



the firmament. Heaven and hell depend on one's own judgment and choice. God has already made everything. Depending on which of them we choose, we are either welcomed into Heaven or cast into hell. Everything will infallibly be fulfilled before God exactly according to how one believes.

My fellow believers, can you now realize the reason why God clearly divided the Truth from the falsehood like this? On the throne of last judgment, God will sternly say the following: "I have clearly divided the water above the firmament from the water below it, and I have told you clearly what is true and what is false. Even though I have thus made it so clear to you, you still chose the falsehood and the words of the Devil over Mine, and so it is only fitting for you to go to where the Devil now lives. Why? Because you are not My people."

Therefore, those who are cast into hell have nothing to say to God. Their lips will grasp for words, but they will find no word to say. God has clearly given us the gospel, the Truth, salvation, everlasting life, and blessings. And for those who look for God and have accepted His Word by faith, God has enabled them to receive all these blessings. However, those who do not drink the water that is above the firmament will ultimately face all curses, for they are unable to receive the remission of their sins. God has divided His blessings from His curses. He has separated His true Word from false words. God has divided them so, just as He made light and divided day from night.

Everyone's fate is determined according to which of God's divisions he chooses while living on this earth. He didn't just separate day from night for no reason. It's bright when the day comes, but it's pitch dark when the night comes.



There are both dark and bright domains. In other words, there actually are both the dominion of the righteous and the dominion of sinners.

Because God has made the division so clearly, if one wants to go to Heaven, all that he has to do is to clearly believe in the light, and if he otherwise wants to go to hell, then he only has to believe in darkness. No matter how gifted and powerful one may be, he cannot change the day into the night and the night into the day. Likewise, human beings cannot once again muddle what God has divided, and no one can change what God has done.

If one's conscience is upright, he has no other choice but to wholly believe in what God has divided. If one looks at the light and accepts it, he will accept the Word of God coming from above and receive everlasting life. The water that is below the firmament—that is, the words of the earth—promotes the acts of mankind. You must

remember clearly that it is nothing more than Satan's words to say that one is made righteous through His own carnal devotion and efforts, by living a holy life—in other words, by keeping the Law and being sanctified. To become righteous by realizing in our hearts how the Word of God has blotted out our sins, and by believing in it and accepting it exactly as it is, has nothing to do with the acts of mankind. God's Word of Truth that descends from above, the water that is above the firmament, is the salvation that God has completed all on His own. The gospel of Truth does not demand that our human deeds should be augmented for our salvation.

The Word of God descends from above, bears fruits on the earth without fail, and once again ascends above. If you believe in the Word of God, the water that is above the firmament, then you will find your happiness, but if you believe in the water that is below the firmament, you will



be accursed. And you will go through incredible sufferings only to be accursed. The sufferings of those who are bound under the legalistic life of faith are far from ordinary. It's such a tragedy to see them, suffering so much from drinking the water that is below the firmament.

Those who have once drunk the water above the firmament can no longer drink the water below it. Those who have drunk only the water below the firmament cannot drink the water above it. That is why they must now return.

## **God's Servants in Whom God Is Well Pleased**

On the second day, God divided the water that was covering the planet earth into two, raising one half above the firmament and leaving the other half on the earth. And God named them

separately: The water above the firmament and the water of the earth. Why did God have this Word written? Did He write it just to let us know a simple fact? No, God wrote it to tell us that there coexist both God's Word and Satan's words.

This is what God did on the second day. We saw the Word saying that God divided light from darkness on the first day, and that He also divided the water of Heaven from the water of the earth on the second day. God is clearly pleased to separate the water of Heaven from the water of the earth, and light from darkness. What, then, is the water of Heaven, and what is the water of the earth?

On this earth, there are two types of people who preach the Word of God. One sort of people are those who actually spread the words of Satan, and the other sort of people are those who preach the real Word of God. The latter group know



God's written Word, believe in it and preach it, but the former group interpret the written Word of God based on their own made-made thoughts, preaching only what pleases Satan and people. Such people interpret the Bible as if it were an ethical guidebook for mankind, and they just preach that if one believes in Jesus Christ, then he should live virtuously. However, they do not know the real message of the Word of God. That is why they are incapable of preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In short, those who are not preaching the gospel of the water and the blood now are those who are preaching the words of Satan. They are the ones who are spreading the Word of God only on a humanistic ethical and moral dimension. They are not God's servants. They are none other than Satan's servants. They are no more than "wage-earners," whose profession is to preach Jesus Christ's Word, just as others

work to make a living. If one leads his life of faith under such people, far from growing his spiritual faith, he will end up dead.

When we drink water on this earth, some water is beneficial to us, while other types of water are only harmful to drink. Likewise, what kind of words we listen to is extremely important to each of our souls. You can be blessed both in body and soul only if you listen to the Word preached by those who spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If a preacher opens the Word of God, and instead of preaching it only emphasizes humanistic ethical and moral lessons, then while such sermons may sound good, it's impossible for there to be any spiritual change. On the contrary, those who hear such teachings will see their souls facing spiritual death. These kinds of words only makes Christians' hearts to fall into even more suffering. The true Word of the water and the Spirit, in contrast, brings peace



and rest to those of us who listen to it. Therefore, when we hear the Word of God, it is not the preacher's knowledge, appearance, or voice that is important, but what is truly important is whether or not this preacher really believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and is spreading it properly.

The gospel of the water and the Spirit is indispensable. In Matthew 7:15, Jesus said, *"Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves."* How, then, can we recognize false prophets? Jesus Christ said that we can find it out by looking at their spiritual fruits.

Can an apple tree bear bananas? An apple tree may be so malnourished that it can only yield a poor batch of fruits, but it still bears apples all the time. But we have to realize that a thorn bush can never bear apples, no matter how well-nourished it might be. In other words, if someone

preaches the Word, and those who hear his words are born again, then this person is a servant of God. However, if people cannot be washed from their sins even after they hear the words preached by this person, then it's clear that the one preaching God's Word is actually nothing more than a false prophet. If the congregation cannot receive the remission of their sins even as they hear the words continuously preached by their preacher for a day, two days, or even a year, then the problem is with the preacher. In other words, false prophets themselves do not know how to be born again of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, nor do they believe in this, and so they just teach people only with their words to receive the remission of their sins.

We cannot say whether one is a false prophet or not just by looking at his outside appearance. When we think about false prophets, we tend to think that their appearance would give a crude,



ruthless, and repulsive impression, but this is actually far from the case. Liars manifest themselves with that much more humility, like a meek lamb. Referring to them, the Bible says, *“And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light” (2 Corinthians 11:14).*

That is why so many people are deceived by them. A preacher who sermonizes without even being born again himself is a false prophet. Such are the false prophets of which the Bible speaks. The outside appearance seen by our eyes is completely irrelevant to the Truth. So even if some people attack us personally, we are okay, as long as we believe in the written Word of Jesus Christ.

False prophets lead countless people to destruction. They don’t just go to hell by themselves, but they take many others with them. It’s because this is what their job is as liars. False

prophets are very good at their job of deceiving people, and so as far as making a living for the rest of their lives is concerned, they have nothing of which to worry. Their congregation, naïve and completely clueless, respect them as pastors, giving them offerings and serving them. So the liars are living in splendid mansions, driving around in luxurious cars, and living an extravagant life, all with the money offered by the congregation. That is why we must beware of false prophets.

However, rather than just criticizing them, all that we have to do is just never go to their gatherings. Those who have received the remission of their sins must not do God’s work with false prophets. When the righteous saints worship God, they must gather together only with their fellow saints who also have been born again of the gospel of water and the Spirit. The Bible says that where two or three people are



gathered in the name of our Lord, He will be there with them. These two or three people refer to the righteous who have received the remission of their sins. The righteous should gather together only with their fellow righteous people, listen to the Word and learn it together, and praise God and follow Him by faith; they should all, then, be just fine. Even if there are only two or three people who are born again, if the one who was born again first preaches the Word and everyone believes in this Word and unites with the will of the Lord, then they will all be blessed by God. Rather than criticizing others, we should know what the Word of the Bible is really saying, and live our lives by faith. This is all that we have to do.

When the Lord returns in the future, false prophets and many believers who had followed them will stand before the Lord and say, “Lord, Lord, I have cast out demons in Your name, I

have prophesied in Your name, and I have done many wonders in Your name.” They will claim that when they were in this world, they built big churches and led many people to Jesus Christ. At that moment, however, our Lord will say to them clearly, “I do not know you at all.” Our Lord will shout at them, “You charlatans and thieves!” He will then command, “Cast them out into darkness!” How just is our Lord’s judgment? There is no need to painstakingly argue over fine points. He will just send to hell those who are bound to hell, and send to Heaven those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the baptism of Jesus Christ and His blood on the Cross. Jesus Christ, who judges justly, is the Chief Justice in Heaven.

On the first day of His creation of the heavens and the earth, our Lord spoke about how human beings are to receive the remission of their sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit,





and on the second day, He told those who had received the remission of their sins to beware of Satan's words. He told the righteous to never drink the water offered by Satan, but instead attain spiritual faith by feeding on God's Word of Truth.

My fellow believers, when we interpret the Word of God, we must interpret it and believe in it according to the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And those who preach the Word of God must preach the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. Those who hear the Word, on the other hand, must feed and live on the Word that comes out of the servants of God. In today's Scripture passage, the spiritual meaning of the water that is below the firmament—that is, the water on the earth—is in the words of false prophets. That is why the Bible tells us to neither listen to them nor feed on them. Even among those who have heard the gospel of the water and the Spirit and

received the remission of their sins, there are far too many people whose spiritual faith is so immature that they are unable to discern the teachings of false prophets, accept them, and as a result, end up spiritually dead.

When we hear the Word of God, there are certain things of which we must be spiritually careful. First, we have to examine to see if those who are preaching God's Word to us know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Word of God, believe in it and are preaching it.

God's servants must absolutely be those who have been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is so that everyone would come to have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We all have to trust in God's servants and follow them as long as they really believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We should accept the admonishment and advice of those who obey the will of God. In



other words, what they say is God's Word. That's because God speaks to His saints through His servants.

Another thing that we must also realize is that it's possible for even the servants of God to have insufficiencies and weakness of the flesh. If God's servants believe in and preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then we have to recognize and accept their carnal selves as they are. For instance, if a servant of God is ugly, we shouldn't think, "God's servant should be handsome; why is he so ugly then?" Far from this, we should instead thank God for him, saying, "God has raised someone like him and is using him as His servant."

In other words, we must not judge the servants of God who are preaching the holy gospel based on their outside appearance. Nor should we make an issue out of such trivial issues as their academic background or age. What must be

made clear is whether or not their hearts cherish the Word of God, know His will, and are following it by faith.

Above all else, the servants of God must have faith in the Word of God. What we should cherish and respect is the faith of the servants of God. We should see and emulate just how much they cherish the gospel of the water and the Spirit, how thankful they are to God, how much they have sacrificed for the gospel, how they are constantly laboring very hard to spread the gospel, how much they love souls, and how they have devoted their hearts for their salvation. We should respect those who have first become God's servants, and we should follow them by faith. Only then can we be loved by God.

God works amid a spiritual order. That's because God is not a God of confusion, but He is the God of order. Do you now have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? Can you say



confidently that you have been born again through the Word of Truth, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? If so, then you now have indeed been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When someone asks you whether you have sin, you can answer him clearly, as you now believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. You can now testify that you have been remitted from all your sins and born again through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. If this is who you are, then you are God's people held and used by God as His instruments.

Now, there is one thing that you must know clearly. When God's servants preach the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, you must examine yourselves to see if you have indeed been born again by faith. To this day, countless people have passed by you, teaching you something other than the gospel of the water and

the Spirit. But when the servants of God preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Word of God, you should all reflect deeply upon yourselves and examine whether or not you have received the remission of your sins by faith. We must all know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit clearly. And we must believe in it.

From now on, you should live your lives of faith accepting the words, advice, and admonishment of these servants of God who have preached the living Word of life to you. Your lives of faith must be lived by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And you must also have faith in God's servants.

In some ways, this may sound as if I am asking you to recognize me. But it is absolutely not with such an intention that I've said this. All that I have done is just preach to you the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit fulfilled according to the will of God. So while there was



sin in your hearts before, now, as you heard the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you have come to realize, “Ah, Jesus Christ took away my sins like this, by being baptized by John the Baptist.”

You have now come to believe that your sins were blotted out by God’s written gospel of the water and the Spirit. Now, depending on how you behave yourselves, you can either please God or sadden Him. Just as light and darkness are separated, as the water of Heaven and the water of the earth are clearly divided, so must your faith be divided by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, with your old faith separated from the new faith that you now have. Now, you must judge for yourselves, “Am I still a sinner right now, or have I become a righteous person by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit?” Whether you are clearly righteous people or sinners before God is decided

depending on whether you believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit or not.

Do you believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? If so, are you then righteous people or sinners? You are the righteous people. Our Lord has saved you through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. So, you have been saved by believing in this Truth.

If this is the case, then there remains one more thing that you have to do, and it is to make up your minds as to whether you would live as God’s servants or Satan’s servants, separating the two in your hearts. To preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to others is the way to live as a servant of God. You, too, must live like this. This is determined by which Word you believe.

It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with our hearts that we have received the remission of our sins. And for us to carry on with our lives of faith afterwards, and



serve the Lord as well, it is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that both are made possible. The foundation of our faith is none other than the gospel of the water and the Spirit. To no longer drink the water that is below the firmament, it is only proper for those who have received the remission of their sins to gather together and worship with their fellow saints. Our faith needs to be accompanied by action.

In other words, once we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we should listen to the Word above Heaven, not to those who preach the words of the earth. If, after believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you once again submit yourselves under those who have not been born again, listen to the words preached by them, and worship in vain, then you will fall again and revert back to the Devil's servants.

We must have faith in what God said on the second day of creation. We must believe in what God did on the second day and follow it. That's because what the Lord did on the first day—that is, saving us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit—was already fulfilled to us, and so we must now live trusting in the pure Word of God. If you believe in what God did on the second day and follow it, then He will bless you abundantly. Whether or not you are blessed by God is a result of whether or not you follow the will of God. Only when we follow the Word that the Lord spoke on the second day can we lead our lives of faith properly.

I know that you are wise. Having heard the Word of Truth, you are probably worried about how you should live your lives of faith. There is now something that the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit must do. Once we receive the remission of our sins, we must follow



the servants of God. Before you were born again, you listened to the liars preaching the water of the earth. But this is not what you wanted. It's because you did not know the Truth. Before you were born again, you had no choice but to listen to the words of those who are not born again.

However, now that you believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you must choose the righteousness of God. "Which words should we choose?" "Who are the real servants of God that preach His Word?" Such questions are entirely yours to decide and answer. This is what you have to do. No one else can do it for you. It's true that the real servants of God can admonish you. But all of us must desire to live according to the will of God. If this is the will of God, then we have no choice. There is nothing that we must do on our own. In other words, we cannot do whatever we desire. Now that we know the will of God, it is our duty to obey this will.

Now, you have to renew your lives of faith. You have to live a life of faith that is on a different plane from what you have been leading so far. There is a life of faith that is better than the one you have lived so far. To live such a life of faith, you must be led. Why? Because that is the way for you to be blessed by God. My fellow believers, do you want to be led?

There must be God's servants who would preach His Word to you. Also, it is my hope and desire that such workers that preach the Word of God would arise among you. Becoming God's worker is not something that just happens by one's own accord all of a sudden. To become a minister of the Word, you have to continue to listen to and learn from the words of those who have first become servants before you, who have preached the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit to you. I have preached the Word of God to you, but was there anything that you could not



understand? We heard the gospel of the water and the Spirit properly.

Many of us heard this Word for the first time, but did you like it? Was it difficult to understand? There are countless mysteries hidden in the Bible, not just the gospel of Truth that enables us to receive the remission of sin, but mysteries about God's Church, His servants, and the spiritually correct life of faith. However, to this day many of you have been feeding only on tares, not the spiritual grain of the Word.

My plan is to diligently put together and publish my sermons explaining the Word of God and provide them to you. I will continue to provide you with the water that is above the firmament. Is today's Word all heard as the living Word of God? If so, it is because you believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And it's because I believe in the living gospel Word of the water and the Sprit, and I have

preached it exactly as it is. To the Lord who has given us the water above the firmament, we give all our thanks. ☒



## To Fulfill the Will of God

<Genesis 1:9-13>

**“Then God said, ‘Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear’; and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth, and the gathering together of the waters He called Seas. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth’; and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, the herb that yields seed according to its kind, and the tree that yields fruit, whose seed is in itself according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. So the evening and the morning were the third day.”**

Today, I would like to share with you what our Lord did on the third day of creation. On the second day, God had divided the water above the firmament from the water below it, but even after this, the surface of the earth was still covered with water. When the third day came, God said, *“Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear,”* and it was so. He also said, *“Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth,”* and this, too, came about as God commanded.

On the third day also, God worked with His Word, and the Bible mentions twice that seeing what was fulfilled, “God saw that it was good.” God was pleased to see the dry land appearing, and He was again pleased to see the earth bringing forth the plants and trees that yield fruits.





When the surface of the earth was covered with water, the ground was not revealed. Without the dry land appearing, the earth looks beautiful no matter how filthy and dirty it may be, since it is covered by water. But, God made the dry land that had been covered under water appear, and called it “earth.” Seeing the appearance of the earth that had been covered with water, God said that it was good. Why, then, was God pleased to see the dry land appearing?

God also said, “*Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind.*” The earth here refers to the human heart, to the sinful nature of mankind. The human heart is extremely deceitful and corrupt. It is filthy and wicked beyond description. However, among all these countless people, there aren’t that many people who know that their dry land (heart) is fundamentally evil.

By what kind of people, then, are the fruits of righteousness born in abundance? The Bible says that the fruits of righteousness are born by those who know that their basic nature is evil.

This principle runs contrary to the worldly principle. In the world, it is said that one’s heart must be good and clean to receive the blessings of Heaven and bear many fruits. Many people understand so, believe so, and are practicing so. However, the Word of Truth says that to bear many fruits of Truth, we must know that our hearts are full of wickedness.

Our Lord said, “*For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil things come from within and defile a man*” (Mark 7:21-23). It is those who know their sinful



fundamental selves like this, the Bible says, that are saved.

The implication of this passage underscores the need to know properly what is present in the basic human heart. One may have received the remission of his sins, but he may or may not bear good fruits, depending on whether he admits that the sinful attributes listed in Mark 7:21-23 are in his heart, or whether he admits just one or two and denies the rest—in other words, whether or not he wholly believes in this Word that reveals our basic nature.

Through His work achieved on this third day of creation, God is showing clearly that the gospel bears abundant fruits through those who know that their fundamental selves are filthy and foul. Mankind's carnal thoughts are always evil. "I have a murderous carnal nature, I am adulterous, and I am perverted. This is who I am by nature"—it is through such people who thus

admit themselves honestly that God bears spiritual fruits.

As today's Scripture passage describes, when God said, "Let the dry land appear," it was so. Why, then, did God command the dry land to appear? The earth had been covered with water, and regardless of how this water was the polluted water that was under the firmament, water is still water; and so when all impurities sink to the bottom, it looks clear in the eye. However, by making the dry land appear, God wanted mankind to realize their fundamental selves. The implication here is that we should know just how filthy and foul beings we all are and be saved by believing in Jesus Christ, and that it is through such people that the fruits of faith are born.

Where do fruit trees grow best? They grow best on a field with plenty of manure. The fruit tree here refers to someone who has received the remission of his sins. Through whom are the



fruits of the gospel born? God says that the spiritual fruits are born through those who really know their true selves as they are, who acknowledge the Word of God as it is, and who admit themselves to God exactly according to His Word, saying, “In my flesh I have lustful desires, I am a thief, an adulterer, a pervert, someone whose thoughts are evil, proud and foolish.” It’s the complete opposite of the teachings of the world.

Jesus Christ is saying, “Know just how filthy your hearts are.” He is saying, “In your hearts, there are evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, thefts, covetousness, lewdness, foolishness, pride, and so on.” Through those who, despite this, do not acknowledge the Lord’s Word and do not expose their sinful selves fully, it is impossible to grow fruit trees, nor to yield any fruit. For such people who do not reveal themselves completely, even after they receive

the remission of their sins, no fruit is produced as others cannot be saved through them—on the contrary, only their hypocrisy is exposed.

Spiritually speaking, it is never a good thing for you to hear others saying how good or virtuous you are. Your basic selves are what were listed above, and so your virtues are nothing more than outward hypocrisy. God is saying to us, “You are evil human beings, you are adulterous, covetous, and thieves, you are filthy and foul, nothing more than a garbage dump and sewage”; yet despite this, when we look at ourselves, this is not how we see. While we may admit one or two wrongdoings, we would like to insist that we still have clear water. Even sewage can be made look clear, if it is left still, as the dirty grime sinks to the bottom and its top layer is cleared. But does this mean that the top water that looks clear is really clean? It only looks clear in the eye, and it is still dirty water



filled with all kinds of germs. So is human hypocrisy like this.

## **More Wicked Than Anything Else Is the Human Heart**

God speaks the Truth, which runs completely opposite to mankind's thoughts. That "the dry land appeared" means that one's true self is exposed. God is saying that He will yield the fruits of the gospel through those who, by believing in the Word of God, come to realize and admit their true selves honestly, saying, "In my flesh I have murderous desires, a heart of adultery, theft, fornication, pride, foolishness, and false witness." We have to admit what God declares about human nature: "*The heart is deceitful above all things, And desperately wicked*" (Jeremiah 17:9). Once again, it's

completely opposite to the teachings of the world.

My fellow believers, you can take pride in the gospel and exalt Jesus Christ only if you know your evil selves. When you have nothing on your own to boast of or are good at, you come to preach only Jesus Christ and take pride in Jesus Christ alone. Apart from what Jesus Christ has done, everything else is all filthy and foul, and those who know this properly can testify anytime and anywhere, "Jesus Christ has saved even someone like me in this way. You, too, are the kind of people revealed in Mark 7, and you must be saved also."

My fellow believers, do you believe that you really are evil beings as God said? Do you believe that every human being is so? God has turned such people like us into those who bear the fruits of the Holy Spirit. Who, then, are the ones that do not admit their wickedness? These



are the ones who, hiding all kinds of filth in their hearts, pretend to be virtuous, go to church on the Lord's day with the Bible tucked at their side and smiling pretentiously, worship in fake holiness inside the church, and pretend to live a holy life. They are the religionists of the world, those who crave the fruits of hypocrisy.

My fellow believers, are human beings capable of living a holy and virtuous life? No, of course not! God says to us, "You are decadent beings." When people love and serve the world more than God, how can they ever live in holiness? Yet many religionists teach that it is possible to live like this, and so they are like completely whitewashed tombs. This is how Jesus Christ rebuked the Pharisees. Christian religionists are godly only when they go to church, but once they are back at home, all their wickedness is fully exposed. What is exposed when human beings commit transgression is their

fundamental selves, but these religionists are completely oblivious to it.

## **God Works Only through Those Who Acknowledge His Word**

In Noah's time, "*the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually*" (Genesis 6:5); and so God wiped out the people of those days with His judgment, but Noah found the grace of God. Thus the Bible writes, "*But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with God*" (Genesis 6:8-9).

God bestowed His grace on Noah and saved him. To the evil human beings whose very



thoughts are evil, God commands them to produce the plants that yield seed and the fruit trees that yield fruit according to their kinds. God does not work in the water, that is, this world. He works on the exposed dry land. That God made the earth yield fruit means that God brings the remission of sin to those whose fundamental selves—the dry land, in other words—are exposed, and it is these people whom He makes them do the good work that serves the gospel.

Among us Christians, there are so many people who are virtuous in the flesh. Someone who is carnally virtuous does not manifest Jesus Christ, but he manifests only his own goodness and virtues. God is never pleased by this but abhors it. We all have to realize that the goodness of mankind stands against God.

Some people say that when I am gentle, I am really gentle, but when I am harsh, I am too harsh. But what virtue do I have that I would

pretend to be virtuous? My fellow believers, even among those who have been saved from sin, it is through those who admit their wickedness—that is, those who believe in the Word of God exactly as it is—that the glory of God is revealed. In contrast, those who do not believe in God’s Word cannot bear any good fruit. The righteousness of God is manifested through those who know that they themselves are the filthiest and foulest beings. We know we are such wicked beings not because we have all committed such sins with our acts, but because when we were illuminated by the Word, we came to admit, “It’s all true! I am such a filthy and wicked being,” and believed so with our hearts. Such people, as their own righteousness is vanished, come to preach only the righteousness of Jesus Christ, and it is from then on that they become instruments of righteousness.



I admonish all of you, from students at our mission school to our ministers, gospel preachers, and brothers and sisters throughout the world, to place no expectation either on yourselves or on other fellow believers. Even though no one can place any expectations on his flesh, many of us are still prone to think, “I am different from the rest.”

But all human beings are the same. God says, “Human beings are piles of sin, a brood of evildoers, more corrupt than anything else.” Yet even through such human beings, fruits can be born, and this is the very testament to God’s power. Isn’t this amazing? This is the simple Truth, that for us to bear fruit, we must first realize who we are. As God has exposed us in all our nakedness and is illuminating us with the Word, saying to us, “You are filled with iniquities,” we must all believe in it and admit it exactly as it is.

Do you admit this fact? We must always admit ourselves as such. Indeed, all that can be squeezed out of mankind is nothing more than filth. We can think hard all we want, but out of our carnal thoughts, nothing else can come out but only evil thoughts, larcenous desires, murderous mind, and adulterous lust. This is the true portrait of mankind as described by God. Yet despite this, many people have absolutely no desire to admit such sins, as long as they have not committed them with their acts. Even though the One who created us is telling us that this is who we are, for He knows all about us, we don’t want to admit it.

So, we try hard to cover our shame with fig leaves. But how long would a skirt made out of fig leaves last? How effective is it to cover ourselves with our acts of hypocrisy? It is all too human for our shame to be exposed in less than a day, or even half a day.



God said no less than twice that it was good to see the dry land exposed and the earth that bore seed. It is through those who really know their true selves that God yields the fruits of righteousness that preach Jesus Christ, the fruits that are beautiful in God's eyes.

## **We Must Acknowledge God's Word with Our Hearts**

Do you now admit that your hearts are deceitful and desperately wicked above all things?

Incidentally, however, there are those who intentionally reveal their wickedness in action, just because God was pleased to see the dry land appearing. Having received the remission of their sins, some people deliberately reveal their wickedness freely, as they have misunderstood

this passage. We shouldn't do this. This passage does not tell us to show our sinful selves through our action, but to admit ourselves before the Word. It is meant to tell us that we should accept the Word of God, admit and acknowledge with our hearts before God first that we are such sinful beings, and find His grace and reach righteousness. It is such people who are wise.

The first phenomenon that appears to those who have received the remission of their sins is that their wickedness is revealed more than their goodness. I even heard that couples that rarely quarreled before being born again ended up quarreling more often after receiving the remission of sin. So having received the remission of sin, they think, "Why am I like this? Maybe did I not receive the remission of my sins? Why is it that this is all that I can become?"

But, don't worry about your salvation if you surely believe in the gospel of the water and the





Spirit. This is God exposing the dry land in your everyday life, because you have not fully acknowledged His Word on your fundamental nature. When we acknowledge the Word, the fruits of righteousness are born. When we do not acknowledge the Word with our hearts, God has to struggle with us and overcome us, and so He exposes us all through our circumstances. That is why those who have been born again just recently agonize over their wickedness.

Given this, my fellow believers, we have to acknowledge the Word of God as soon as possible and believe in it, especially about our fundamental nature. We then really can live in the light of the Word of God, take pride in the gospel, and live together with the gospel and with God.

We must realize the real substance of mankind. Yet some people do not know the real substance of mankind, and so even as they heard

the gospel, they still try to live virtuously, and when this is proven impossible, they eventually end up giving up their faith in the righteousness of God. No life of faith can be lived like this. Through the Word, we must first realize who we really are.

Can you now understand this? Do you now clearly admit your true selves, just as revealed in the Word? As we carry on with our lives of faith, I admonish you all to admit yourselves. As for me, I myself am exactly as revealed in the Word of God. It is because we have nothing to boast of, and because no human being has any goodness at all, that Jesus Christ took away the sins of people like me, all the sins of everyone in this world. It is because Jesus Christ was preached and I believed in the Word of God that I have become a righteous man. The Holy Spirit in me is testifying that only the Word of God is true. That is how I have become an instrument of



righteousness that spreads God's righteousness. If I did not have the Word of Jesus Christ, I would have had no choice but to live as a man rotten to the core and reeking foul smells.

Nonetheless, those who stand before God try not to expose their filthy aspects as much as possible, and they attempt to cover them up, even if it makes them hypocrites. In other words, everyone wants to hide his blemishes and insufficiencies from God. However, when we seek to admit and expose the wickedness that is in our hearts, the whole purpose is to realize and know the gift of the true remission of our sins. That is why our wickedness must be exposed even more, so that we may receive the real remission of our sins.

Actually, the wickedness that everyone has was something that even oneself could not realize on his own. However, those whose wickedness is not exposed before God cannot

receive the remission of sin that the Lord offers to us as His gift.

In chapter 8 of John, there is an account of a woman who was caught in adultery in the very act, and whose sins were forgiven by Jesus Christ. Of this woman and the many people who were accusing her, who was blessed to receive the remission of sin? To those who had picked up stones and were ready to cast them at the woman, Jesus Christ said, "He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first." In effect, Jesus Christ was saying to them, "You, too, are all sinners, just like that woman."

However, because the crowd did not wholly admit that they were sinners before the Word of the Lord, they all left, and only the woman could receive the remission of her sins. This means that those whose wickedness are not exposed before God cannot be blessed to receive the remission of sin that He offers. Everyone must pull out



their wickedness and stand bare before the presence of God. When Peter first met the Lord, he, too, confessed, “*Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord*” (Luke 5:8).

Yet there are so many people who are so completely oblivious to their real entity. Representative of such people were the Pharisees discussed in the Bible, who failed to realize their wickedness, and who sought to hide it whenever it was threatened to be exposed even slightly. Before God, their hearts had no faith in His righteousness, and so they boasted their own righteousness instead.

The Bible says that such people try hard to cover the righteousness of God that constitutes the Truth of salvation, as they seek to manifest their own righteousness (Romans 10:3). They claim that they are different from everyone else. Approaching God only with their own human righteousness, they ultimately fail to believe in

the righteousness of God and end up standing against it. In other words, such people have too much of their own righteousness that they actually end up suffering great losses, as they are incapable of holding onto God’s righteousness, fail at their lives of faith, and are unable to be saved.

Even today, the religionists of the world are boasting their own righteousness and exalting themselves, rather than exalting the righteousness of God. It is indeed an unbearable sight to see such people coming before God and seeking to manifest only their own righteousness, completely ignorant of their true selves.

However, God is saying to such people just how filthy and foul they all are. As such, all of us must come before God, humbly lower our heads and hearts, and accept His righteousness and believe in it with thanksgiving. Fundamentally speaking, those who fear God lower their hearts,



exalt His righteousness, and believe in it. Those who know their true selves and have humble faith before God will receive great blessings, for they are rejoicing through believing in God's righteousness. Today's Pharisees, the religionists of this age, must also look into their own hearts and admit their own wickedness. When they admit, "God, I am so evil. Please have mercy on me," the Lord will then meet them through the Word of Truth.

Many of you probably grew up dotted with many compliments, hearing people saying, "You are such a good kid! You are so well-mannered and so pretty." So to this day, you probably thought that this was who you were. Such people do not know themselves even as they are standing before God, and so in the end, they are ultimately unable to attain true faith. Because they have to pretend to be clean even though there are all kinds of filth inside them, they end

up turning into religionists, skilled at whitewashing themselves in hypocrisy as the days go by.

However, what we must realize is the fact that by nature, we are not so good and righteous as to be commended for such a manner. God declares that there is absolutely nothing that is good or right in us (Romans 3:10-12).

A brother at my church recently told me the following story. To attend college, this brother had left his home and was living in the city where my church is located. Whenever he went back home during a break, he always heard his parents saying, "Our son is here! Where on this earth could we ever find a better son than you?"

But as he spent some time away from home and saw himself, he realized that he was not that good or virtuous, but he was actually filthy beyond description. So he thought about this, and he realized that he had to be careful not to



misbehave while in his hometown as there were many relatives living close by, and this explained why he seemed so well-mannered to his parents. But as he spent time away in a city where no one knew him, all his true self was exposed as he really was. So this brother confessed that he could not avoid but admit all his fundamentally wicked self, just as described in chapter 7 of Mark.

When we are under ideal circumstances, we all think that we are virtuous, but once our circumstances change—for instance, were we to move to a new city—and we are completely on our own without anyone interfering, then our true selves are all exposed, and we come to realize just how evil and filthy we are.

However, what is amazing is that once God exposes someone's wickedness, He begins to work in his heart. When a farmer plants seeds in the field, he doesn't just plant them without any

preparation. He first plows the field, sorts out the stones, furrows the field, and then sows the seeds.

God also works like this. In other words, it is when the wickedness of our hearts is exposed that God also begins to work. So we have to realize that when the water covering the earth is drained, filthy trash is exposed there. All kinds of waste come out of there, from discarded tires to plastic bags, dusters, shoes, torn umbrellas, and rags. We can also see liquor bottles, beer cans, whiskey bottles, and even electric home appliances rusting away.

God first strips the human heart and exposes its wickedness to bare, and from there He begins to do His work of salvation through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must now understand what it means when God said, "Let the dry land appear," and why He was pleased to see this.



We can never be approved by God for our human goodness. Yet despite this, even to this day, countless people still think of themselves to be virtuous. Not knowing their true selves, they think themselves to be clean. They think they are at least better than some people. They are just like the crowd who accused the woman caught in the very act of adultery, and who thought themselves to be better than this woman. The religionists refrain from drinking and smoking, and so they treat anyone who drinks and smokes as a sinner.

But, what about you? Do you think you are better than someone who goes to a burlesque? No, you have nothing better. If you are any better, it's only because you now dwell in God's Church, and you believe in the Word of God and follow it in your lives; if you had not been born again, and only led religious lives in this world, then you would have been the same as any

nonbeliever. That is why God first exposes the dry land, the earth, and then works on this exposed land.

Of all the works that God does to us, the very first thing that He does is to break our mindset that holds ourselves to be good and virtuous. He strips us of our confused thoughts and misconceptions. Given the fact that the basic human nature itself is filthy and evil, how would it be possible to lead an upright life of faith without even realizing this?

When I had been living my life of faith before I was born again, I, too, was praised by many of my congregation for my goodness and recognized as an exemplary believer. So I myself naturally came to think in like manner. However, I was still tormented constantly by the sins that I committed secretly. It was only later on, after I was born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and after my false self-portrait that



had covered my heart and thoughts came off, that I was finally able to lead a proper life of faith.

When water is withdrawn from the earth, it is from then on that your wickedness is revealed. All the hypocrisy encouraged and sought after by the religions of the world is also exposed. So when we throw out our false righteousness and our false goodness, from then on, God will work in our lives with His Word and make us bear the fruits of salvation. If we really want to bear fruits through the righteousness of God, then we must first rely on the Word of the Lord, rather than relying on ourselves, for our true selves are filthy and foul. In other words, instead of preaching our own righteousness, when we preach the righteousness of Jesus Christ and live by believing in the righteousness of God, the fruits of salvation will then be born in our hearts.

My fellow believers, as we compare our own righteousness to the righteousness of God, we

must realize that we are that much more wicked and filthier. And because there is nothing right in ourselves, because we are filled with all kinds of filth, it is absolutely indispensable to have this gospel of the water and the Spirit that gives us God's perfect righteousness. We must cherish and believe in the righteousness of God. Are you now persuaded? If we are clean by nature, then there would be no need for Jesus Christ to help us with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The more we realize that our true selves are evil and filthy, the more we cannot help but boast about the righteousness of Jesus Christ before God. That is why God commanded to let the dry land appear. The dry land must be exposed. Many of you still do not have your dry land exposed. The dry land must appear completely. This does not mean that you should deliberately commit many wicked deeds. Rather, it means that you should cast aside your humanistic



thought that holds yourselves to be virtuous, and instead believe in the righteous of God that He has manifested through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

All the mistaken knowledge that is in our flesh and our thoughts must be removed, as our pretentious posturing to goodness must also be removed. Only then does the Word of God work in the tablets of our hearts. People must follow Jesus by faith, but many fail to do so. If you look around, you can probably see some people who are very quick-minded world-wise. I am referring to those who are very cunning and calculating in the ways of the world. Strangely, such people cannot become disciples following Jesus Christ. That's because rather than trusting in God, they rely more on their own plans and calculations.

Such people must cast aside their shrewdness. You probably also have some people around you with human virtues. Neither can these people

become Jesus Christ's disciples. No one can follow Jesus Christ with his own goodness. Why? Because they think they are more virtuous than Jesus Christ. When they think they are better than Jesus Christ, how could they ever follow Him? For such people also, they can become Jesus Christ's disciples only if they cast aside their own goodness and pride. Only those who have forsaken their everything can answer, "Yes, You are right, Lord. Only Your Word alone is true," and become disciples following Jesus Christ. For all those who have an abundance of only human emotions, human pride and human feelings, their pride and attachments must be removed by their faith in Jesus Christ.

That is why the Lord said, *"Whoever desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me"* (Mark 8:34). Perhaps you are now thinking, "How can I live like that? It would be so desolate." Do not worry,





however. Thanks to our God, new joy will come into your lives. After all, didn't the guests at the wedding feast in Cana taste the better wine that the Lord gave them only after they ran out of the wine prepared by the host?

You must cast aside everything that is human. This seems so bleak though, doesn't it? But it is not. On the contrary, spiritual and pure joy will fill your lives. You will sing truly spiritual praises, and you will indeed pray by faith; the Word will also work forcefully in your hearts; and through the gospel preached by us, many people will begin to live their true lives of faith where they are actually saved. So because of all this, our hearts will be filled with joy in the Lord and the Holy Spirit. When those who had taken pride in their own goodness and humanity are told to cast such things aside, they get all worried and don't know what to do, as they had relied on them so much to this day. However, once they

boldly do away with these things, they will experience for themselves new joy and new happiness springing forth from God. They will no longer be filled with their own human emotions, but with the Spirit of God.

My fellow believers, we must cast aside our old things. God said to Abraham, "*Get out of your country, from your family and from your father's house, to a land that I will show you*" (Genesis 12:1). Likewise, God wants us to throw out our old things.

Returning to today's Scripture passage again, let us look at what God did to us on the third day: "*Then God said, 'Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear'; and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth, and the gathering together of the waters He called Seas. And God saw that it was good*" (Genesis 1:9-10).



## The Dividing Ministry of God

On the third day also, God continued to divide. On this day, He divided the dry land from water, as He made the land appear by having all the water under the heavens gather into one place. He separated the dry land from the water. In other words, God wanted something in our thoughts and hearts to be divided.

Before the third day came, the whole earth was entirely covered by water. The land and the water were all mixed. This implies that in the hearts of those who still do not have spiritual order established, despite having been born again, the desire to serve God and the desire to serve themselves are all mixed together. So if one leads his life of faith in this condition, he ends up wavering back and forth, sometimes living for himself, other times for God; and there

are many people who live their entire lifetime like this.

However, in such people's hearts, God divides the dry land from the water, the earth from the seas. "Is your life for Me, or is it for yourself and the world?" God wants us to answer this question clearly. In other words, He wants to separate our two mixed motives. And God does not want us to love our own flesh and love the world.

Even among those of us who have received the remission of sin, there are a lot of people living like this, with their purpose for life all mixed up in their hearts. So, many people, even though they have received the remission of their sins, pretend to live for God even as they live to enjoy this world, trying to satisfy both sides.

Some workers who had lived entirely to serve the gospel have packed up and gone out to the world. One common thing that they all said when they left us was this: "I, too, want to live freely."



But, is there no freedom if we live serving the gospel? Far from it, there is even greater freedom. In their hearts, their love for the self was mixed with their love for God, and as it seized them, they ended up reaching spiritual death.

Even among the born-again, there are many people who live wavering back and forth between the spirit and the flesh, and yet comfort themselves by saying that they are still living for God. God does not approve of such people, and He wants to clearly separate what is spiritual from what is carnal in us, just as the earth was divided from the seas. God wants to make a clear division in our confused hearts and thoughts. God has clearly divided the flesh as the flesh, the spirit as the spirit, the work of God as the work of God, and the work of man as the work of man.

Our God wanted to make a clear division in such aspects, and He did so on the third day. You

are now being nourished with the Word in the mission school. Why are we attending this mission school? What is the difference between those who are trained in our mission school and those who are not? The goal of the mission school's training is to divide the spirit from the flesh in your hearts. It is to thus make you live entirely for God. Those to whom God's work has not been fulfilled in this aspect are those who are going back and forth like this, living for both God and themselves. They are the ones to whom the work of the third day is yet to be fulfilled.

As you are now trained living with me, you must realize that to learn and understand the Word only intellectually is not the end of all. First of all, you must set a signpost in your hearts, "For what should I live?" You have to attend the class and the other training courses of our mission school with a determined heart, saying, "I will live for God. I will freely offer my



body, time, or anything else if it would help to spread the gospel of God.”

God wants us to make up our minds to live our lives only for God and His gospel. So, He asks us to clarify for what we live at this point. This dividing work must arise clearly in us. We must discern what is spiritual from the things of flesh in us. Such a work must arise in the hearts of the born-again without fail.

Only when this work arises can the work of bearing fruits then begin. Without such a work, no fruit is ever born. If one has one foot in the world and another foot in God, and lives his life of faith like this saddling the fence, then God cannot work in such people’s hearts. Once we receive the remission of our sins, we must decide whether we would live for God or for ourselves, for the world and for God—we must choose either one or the other of them. While the choice

must be made clearly, the righteous cannot live for the world.

## **Remove Impurities from Your Faith in the Grace of God**

The Bible says, “*Old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new*” (2 Corinthians 5:17). From now on, we who have been made new must live for God, for what is righteous. Living only for God is spiritual, while trying to fulfill only the carnal desires is of the flesh. And we have to believe in God’s Word that says, “*For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God;*



*for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be” (Romans 8:5-7).*

This is something that must be set unambiguously in both our hearts and minds. Even the things that you enjoyed in the past, if they were for you, then you must be able to boldly cut them off for God and for the gospel, and if they really do not please God, then you must be able to boldly and clearly cut them off from your hearts also.

Just as impurities must be removed from silver to obtain pure silver, so must we remove from our hearts the remaining carnal impurities that are mixed in them. You must clearly discern and separate what really is right in your hearts, and you must make up your minds, deciding, “Lord, I will really live for You. For the sake of the gospel and for You, I will dedicate all my life. I will offer my life only for You. I will not offer myself for the world and for its vanities.”

My fellow believers, it’s more than possible for us to live the rest of our lives enjoying the world. But would God be pleased if we were to live like this, or would He be pleased if we were to live entirely for Him alone? For what should we live to please God? In other words, what is good in God’s eyes? In God’s eyes, the right life is to live for Him, for the gospel, and for all the lost souls to receive the remission of their sins, fearing Him and following Him. In each of you also, God began to work on the third day. What kind of work did He begin on the third day? He said, “Let the land that had been submerged in water appear.” Then, the dry land appeared, and God separated it clearly from the water. He separated the love for the world from the love for God, and what is spiritual from what is carnal.

We have to do many different things to spread the gospel. If the gospel needs it, then we don’t care what happens to us. We are willing to do



anything if it would please God. We are willing to pay any price. If we really cherish this gospel and God, then we must pay any price that this entails. Before God, in other words, we must be willing to give up anything, no matter how precious it might be.

My fellow believers, you are not attending this mission school for no reason. Maybe some of you might have enrolled here without a clear sense of purpose. However, my fellow believers, God is working in your hearts without fail. He is dividing what is spiritual from your carnal desires, making you set the spiritual goal of your lives. During the training period of the mission school, the spirit and the flesh must indeed be clearly divided in your hearts, and the work of removing all those worldly desires must be achieved. So we all need to pray ardently for this to come about.

## **We Must Fear God in Our Lives**

We the born-again may not know all of the Bible, but we must live the rest of our lives entirely for God and for the gospel. One of the hymns that we sing has the following lyrics: “Offering all our bodies and all our wealth, let us spread this gospel.” If we really cherish God and cherish the gospel, then it is only proper to offer not only our bodies, but also our wealth. For this gospel, for Him, and for the expansion of the Kingdom of God, we must offer all our existence. Unless we set our minds wholly like this, we cannot serve the Lord, nor can there arise the work that clearly divides the earth from the water.

Should we really live for the world and for ourselves, or should we live our lives for God? Is it right or wrong to live for God? Which is right? To live entirely for God, or to live enjoying the



world? For the born-again, to live entirely for God is what is right.

Even when a lion chases after a rabbit, it cannot catch its prey unless it puts all its energy. Even when we hammer a nail on the wall, we cannot get it right unless we concentrate on hammering. Like this, even a small task requires all our attention and effort to achieve it, and so when it comes to doing God's work, it is far more so that we should really dedicate all our hearts, effort, will and devotion to this work to achieve it. If the Word of God says this is right, then we must fear this Word and follow it accordingly.

My fellow believers, God does not say to us to live any way we want once we receive the remission of our sins, since we are now made sinless. On the contrary, God tells us that from this moment on, we must really press toward the goal (Philippians 3:14). Did we cast aside the

Law of God? No, we did not forsake it. Through this Law God taught us about our sins, and He led us to Christ to receive the remission of our sins. The Bible says that now that we have received the remission of our sins, it is right for us to fear the Word of God, and according to how this Word leads us, love God and live full lives. We must not receive the Word of God only with our heads as a matter of intellectual exercise. The Word of God must be believed with the heart. And in our sincere hearts we need to decide to live for God and for His gospel.

## **It Is Right for All of Us to Now Live for the Spreading of the Gospel**

All of us must set our minds, saying, "From now on I will live for the righteousness of God." This heart is truly indispensable. My fellow



believers, as we carry on with our lives that are as short as a midnight dream, for what should we live to be right? It is right to live for the gospel and for God. It is absolutely right to live for the Lord, for the other souls to receive the remission of their sins. The righteous cannot just live in whatever way they want. The right life to live is to live for God.

Although we are insufficient, it is right for us to live for the gospel while on this earth. It is proper for us to live our lives for the expansion of His Kingdom, and for the countless souls that are perishing away. While we dwell in our flesh, we can end up doing many futile things, but it is proper for us the righteous to offer all our hands, feet, lips, and heads for the souls of sinners, for the expansion of the Kingdom of God, and to serve Him; and it is also proper for all our belongings to be used for the Lord. Those who

live such a life are those who, like Daniel, have set their minds to serve God.

You are God's workers. The people of God must clearly live only for God, no matter what circumstances or conditions they might be facing. Many people think offering tithes is just too much. Even though they are only giving only a tenth of their income, they still begrudge it, thinking it's too much.

For the servants of God, it's not just a tenth, but the entirety. It is proper for His servants to offer everything. In other words, the life that is for the Lord is their lives, the will of the Lord is none other than their will, and His purpose is none other than their purpose. This is who God's people are. Just because we give tithes, serve a little in church, and take part in the hour of worship, this does not constitute a life of faith, but we must offer our entire lives to the gospel, and whatever we do, we must do for the gospel.





This is what a life of faith is all about; it is not to say, “This hour is for me, this hour is for my work, this hour is for my family, and the rest is for the Lord.” Family life, work life, school life, all these are lived for the Lord.

You may then say, “How do I make a living then? If I just serve the Lord alone, who is going to take care of my family?” Do not worry, my fellow believers. If we serve only the Lord, He will take the full responsibility for us and take care of us.

Our Lord said, “*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon*” (Matthew 6:24), and He went on to say, “*Therefore do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’ For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father*

*knows that you need all these things. But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you*” (Matthew 6:31-33). We believe in this Word, and do not worry about all our necessities, for we are far more precious than the sparrows of the air.

This is what God achieved on the third day. The earth and the seas must be divided. The spirit and the flesh must be clearly separated in our hearts. If there still are carnal attachments sticking to and lingering in our hearts, the work of separating them must take place. Trainees at the mission school you must be clear on this issue. Your hearts must not yearn after this world, nor should you seek after only the happiness of your own flesh. You need to have the disposition to walk with the Lord, to suffer with Him and to be happy with Him. Do you now understand this?



## **We Are Soldiers of the Kingdom of Heaven**

Our hearts must be set properly before God. Even if an army has hundreds of thousands of soldiers, if this army does not really fight for its nation and its king, then all these countless soldiers are completely useless. They only waste military supplies and drain the nation's treasury.

In contrast, even if an army only has 300 soldiers, if all these soldiers are filled with a faithful dedication to their nation and their king, then these 300 soldiers form an elite force. Even if they fight against an army with hundreds of thousands of soldiers, these 300-strong soldiers will prevail. What kind of army must we become then? Before God, we must become like the elite force, living for only the gospel and Him.

To illustrate, let me tell you a short story here. Long ago, there were two nations. One was a

nation of simpletons, and the other was a clever nation. In the nation of simpletons, everyone was slow-witted, from its king to its people. In the nation of the clever, in contrast, the king was very smart, as were its people very cunning.

One day, the two nations went to war against each other. When the king of the clever nation ordered, "Charge!" his soldiers did not charge, saying, "Your majesty, we should not charge in right now. It would be wiser to wait a bit longer and then charge forward." The king of the dim nation also commanded, "Charge!" Hearing this order, his soldiers stormed the battleground, not caring whether they died or not. The nation of simpletons won this war. How did it win? It won because its soldiers did as commanded by the king, without insisting on their own right way.

In other words, even though the soldiers were inadequate, they threw down their lives for their king and their nation. The nation of the clever



could have easily vanquished the dim nation and won the war, since everyone there was so smart, but far from this, its king was seized and its army was annihilated. Even though the soldiers of the dim nation lacked wisdom, they had set their minds for their king. The king could win the war through these completely dedicated soldiers.

We are soldiers in a spiritual war. In waging this war, if we only set our hearts clearly, saying, “Lord, I will live for You alone,” then we can win the war. In contrast, those who have not set their minds on the Lord will lose every war they fight, even if they were to wage a hundred wars. How should our hearts be then? Our hearts must be clearly set to live for God.

Why did we come to the mission school? Did we come to be good preachers? Did we come to learn the secrets to be successful ministers? We didn’t come to the mission school for this. We did not come to the mission school here to

receive some special gift—that is, such things as the gift of tongues or the gift of prophecy. For what, then, did we come to the mission school? Did we not come to live for the Lord? Indeed, we came because we wanted to live for the Lord. Once we set our hearts to live for God, He will permit and give all that we need.

It is not to become someone like Cain, an expert at carnal affairs, that we came to this mission school. For what, then, should we now live? Although we are worthless like Abel, we must live the kind of life that is lived for God, setting our hearts, obeying Him when He speaks, and uniting our hearts with Him with a “yes”. Our hearts must be set toward God, and our hearts must be at His side. God needs those whose hearts are at His side. It is to live for Him that we came to the mission school. That is why we are now being trained here.



My fellow believers, now that you heard the Word, how do you think about your purpose for coming to the mission school? Has it not changed a bit? You received the remission of your sins and came to the mission school for God, to spread the gospel to souls, and to serve the work that expands the Kingdom of God. It is for this purpose that you are now learning the Word, praying, and being trained in various aspects.

As such, those who came into the mission school should not have too many of their own thoughts. It is here at this mission school where our own thoughts are made to disappear. Those who think too much on their own, or seek after some personal and individual affairs, are not qualified as God's soldiers. Even though we are insufficient in our flesh, as we have joined the ranks of the army, when our Lord, who has become our true King, commands us, "Charge!"

we must be prepared to charge forward without question, and wholeheartedly obey whatever the Lord commands us.

Our God has called all of us to make us His workers.✉



## To Enter Inside God's Work

<Genesis 1:9-13>

**“Then God said, ‘Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear’; and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth, and the gathering together of the waters He called Seas. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth’; and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, the herb that yields seed according to its kind, and the tree that yields fruit, whose seed is in itself according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. So the evening and the morning were the third day.”**

In the beginning, God created all the creations of the universe, and then created mankind. He had people be born again by the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Then on the third day, God said, *“Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth,”* (Genesis 1:11); and as it became so, God saw that it was good.

Among these works that God did on the third day, what does the earth refer to? It refers to our hearts. Therefore, this passage means that by sowing God's Word in the hearts of people, God had His Word bud, blossom, and bear fruit inside our hearts. It is telling us the fact that God is speaking to and working in our hearts.

For us to lead a life of faith is to accept God's Truth into our hearts and to bear the fruit of the Holy Spirit through faith. However, the greatest obstacle to the Word of Truth blossoming and



bearing fruit in our hearts is our man-made thoughts of the flesh. Human thoughts are absolutely useless for one's soul to be saved from sin and bear the fruit of the Holy Spirit. That is why God had told the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place. Through today's Scripture passage, the Lord teaches us how to bear the fruit of the Holy Spirit.

## God Lets His Word of Truth Bear Fruits in Our Hearts

On the third day of creation, God made the dry land appear from the waters, and on this exposed earth, He let all the herbs that yield seeds and all the trees come into existence. What does it mean when God said, "*Let the dry land appear*"? As I've mentioned before, in the Bible, the dry land

refers to people's hearts. Why did God then say here, "*Let the dry land appear*"?

It is because people have to know what the sins inside their hearts are like in order for the power of God's Word to be able to work in their hearts. Our God commanded the dry land to appear precisely because He wanted to blot out people's sins and make them disappear once and for all.

If people's hearts were fundamentally virtuous, there wouldn't be any need for salvation. But, because people are fundamentally evil in their hearts, they all need to be saved from such sins. In other words, God is saying here that mankind's sins must be fundamentally exposed. From the very birth, all human beings were born as sinners, and they cannot help but sin until the day they die. Therefore, people have to be able to see how much of a sinner they are, and just how vulgar and evil they are in essence.



## What Sort of Fundamental Sins Does Mankind Have in Its Heart?

In the hearts of people, there are 12 types of sins: evil thoughts, adulteries, thefts, murders, fornications, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, and foolishness. All these sins, by residing in people's hearts, have made them commit transgressions and become sinners before God. It means that because of such sins, people have no choice but to go on sinning throughout their lives. It also means that everyone has no choice but to receive God's judgment and destruction. As such, it is the sins of people that defile them. As Jesus Himself said, *"What comes out of a man, that defiles a man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an*

*evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil things come from within and defile a man"* (Mark 7:20-23).

Therefore, people must know what sort of evil resides in their hearts fundamentally, and accept the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, which is the Truth of salvation that Jesus Christ has given them, into their own hearts. We must acknowledge the fact that the sinful nature as enumerated in the Gospel of Mark chapter 7 is in our flesh, even after receiving the remission of our sins. It is when we thus admit our sinful nature that we are able to follow, by faith, the Word of Truth that the Lord has given us. We all must accept the Lord's Word into our hearts, and we must also recognize the fact that there is nothing good in us, and that only God is good. In order for us to receive salvation from all sins, we must know our own wickedness and accept the gospel of the remission of sin that Jesus Christ



has given us. Unless these two necessary conditions are met, no one can receive the remission of his sins.

Jesus Christ came to this earth to save those who would otherwise fundamentally go to hell for their sins. Just as Jesus Christ said, *"I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance,"* (Luke 5:32), Jesus Christ wanted to save from all sins those among the sinners living on this earth who completely accept the fact that they themselves are sinners.

The Bible says that if people do not reveal that they themselves are sinners, they cannot bear the fruit of salvation by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord. God has allowed only those who perfectly accept themselves as sinners to receive the true remission of sin. In order to receive God's grace of salvation, one must accept the fact that he is a sinner, but this isn't done just by saying, "I am a

sinner," without any standards. Rather, it is done through the recognition of the Word of God. Depending on whether we acknowledge the Word of God or not, we either remain as sinners or are made righteous.

All people, as the Lord had said in Mark 7:21-23, must admit that they themselves are an entirely sinful mass, and they need to receive salvation from all sins by believing in the Lord. From the very birth, mankind's heart is naturally predisposed to commit such sins as murder, fornications, theft, lewdness, pride, foolishness, bearing false witnesses, and so on. Therefore, we all must believe in and follow the gospel of the water and the Spirit that has fulfilled the righteousness of God.

When the Bible says that the dry land was revealed, it implies that a person's own evil has been revealed. It means that God saves someone who frankly admits his own wickedness by the





gospel of the water and the Spirit, and through that person, He bears many more fruits of salvation.

However, to those who do not admit their wickedness but instead claim their own goodness, God-given salvation does not affect them, for such people pursue their own righteousness instead of God's righteousness. Before God, it is wrong for a person to hear others saying, "You are good. You are kind." If you are reputed to be very kind and virtuous, I hope you realize that you, with your own virtue, have probably become someone who stands against the righteousness of God. Human virtue is hypocrisy, acknowledged by only human beings. As it was said before, the fundamental image of a human being is that of someone who thinks evil and commits murder, and it is full of such sins as fornications, thefts, adulteries, lewdness, bearing false witnesses, pride,

foolishness, etc. Therefore, humans are like garbage cans. Otherwise, why would God have said, *"The heart is deceitful above all things, And desperately wicked; Who can know it?"* (Jeremiah 17:9)

The problem is that people do not properly know what they themselves are like. People even deceive themselves. Because people face one another under the mask of hypocrisy, they are seeing each other's false images. They thus go on concealing themselves to the very end, without accepting their evil true nature. There are many people who do not accept their sinful selves to the very end by deceiving God, as well as themselves. Such are those who do not accept by faith the gospel Truth that the Son of God has saved them from all sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Thus, the most evil are those who try to conceal their evil with hypocrisy. These people become the greatest



enemies of God in this world and stand against Him the most.

No one is fundamentally virtuous. That is why it is said in the Bible, *“There is none righteous, no, not one; There is none who understands; There is none who seeks after God. They have all turned aside; They have together become unprofitable; There is none who does good, no, not one,”* (Romans 3:10-12).

God is saying to all people, “You are a lewd human being.” Do you think people could lead a holy life by themselves? That is such a great misapprehension. Even so, the world is teaching people that they can live virtuously, and the consequence of this false teaching is that people only become hypocrites, acting as if they were virtuous.

Deceivers in today's Christianity have scattered the ashes of hypocrisy upon members of the church. Because hypocrites go on living

everyday by pretending to be virtuous, they do not know that they are evil beings before God. Why don't they know that they are evil beings? It is because they do not know their fundamental selves. By nature, all humans were born as sinners from their birth. However, Satan the Devil has scattered the ashes of hypocrisy all over our thoughts and hearts repeatedly, so that we would not know our true existence, to prevent mankind from receiving the remission of sin from God.

In Genesis 6:5, it is said, *“Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.”* As a result, God brought down His judgment on this world. At that time, only eight members of Noah's family were saved, and all the rest of the wicked were judged. Noah, by finding the grace of



salvation from God, was saved from the judgment of the water.

## **What Sort of People Does God Dislike?**

People whom God dislikes the most are those who rattle on hypocrisy before God. Those who do not acknowledge the fact that they are evil sinners are all hypocrites. Hypocrites are those who do not listen to their own conscience, which tells them that they are bound to hell for their sins, and disregard the baptism of the remission of sin and the gospel of the salvation of the blood given by Jesus Christ. Hypocrites are those who pretend to be righteous people despite the fact that they are such great sinners, and claim to have received the remission of their sins despite the fact that they haven't really received it yet.

Those who act hypocritically before God are those who believe in God without knowing the Truth of being born again of water and the Spirit, and they are those who immerse themselves in the acts of hypocrisy in order to hide their evils.

God dislikes the hypocrisy of humans the most—that is, their false goodness—for their hypocrisy goes against the true goodness of God. Yet, some people criticize us for glorifying only the righteousness of God and denouncing the goodness of human beings. They say that we have greatly erred. It may be a mistake from their own point of view, but if we look from God's perspective, it is the exact opposite.

People are fundamentally evil, but they still try to carry out virtues in order to disguise themselves. However, trying to cover their evils with a tiny virtue is like trying to cover up the sky with the palm of a hand. Human beings are themselves filthy and obscene, and so how can



we say that people are virtuous? What goodness is there in human beings? On the contrary, people have to confess their wickedness and receive the perfect remission of their sins as white as snow by believing in the Word of the Bible, which is the Word of God. And then, after having become righteous by receiving the remission of their sins, they have to pursue the true goodness of God, not the hypocrisy of human beings. They have to throw away all their hypocrisies and evils, and they must then follow the true goodness of God.

How do we know that we are filthy and obscene beings? It isn't by the fact that we have committed such sins in our own acts, but rather, we realize so by the fact that when we reflect ourselves upon the Word of God, we cannot help but admit that all those evils are indeed found in our hearts. This is the way to become a sinner before the Word—that is, to recognize ourselves

as sinners. In order to receive the salvation of God's grace, we must first become sinners before the Word at least once. Although we are all evil human beings, by accepting the gospel of the salvation of the remission of sin, we have been saved from all our sins and are now living our lives as righteous people. Moreover, all those who have thus received their salvation would discard their hypocrisy from then on and live their lives by believing only in the righteousness of Jesus Christ.

God does not put His hopes on the hypocrisy of mankind. Because everyone is fundamentally a hypocrite, God cannot put His hopes on human beings themselves. Also, because hypocrisy is something that is pursued by all the religions of the world, God places His hopes on those who believe in His Word, instead of placing them on religion. Hypocrisy not only brings one's own downfall, but it also drives everyone into evil



ways. Moreover, hypocrisy is an obstacle that blocks God's blessings, as well as a passage that brings a curse to people. Therefore, regardless of who, everyone must remove the mask of hypocrisy before God and people alike, and return to the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Since hypocrisy is something that ruins one's own soul, people have to follow the Truth.

What, then, is the God-given Truth of salvation? It is the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ. We can all be born again now, for Jesus Christ has saved us from all our sins and trespasses by receiving baptism from John the Baptist and then dying on the Cross.

Furthermore, because of this Truth, it has become clear that there is no virtue in human beings. Whoever you may be, do not deceive yourselves. And do not be deceived by anyone

else's hypocrisy either. No one should regard himself highly.

Before starting to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, do you accept the fact that you are evil before the Lord? We must wholeheartedly accept the fact that we ourselves are evil beings. Truly, there is only evil that can come out of human beings, no matter how much effort one might put in. The fact is that only the thoughts of robbery, murder, adultery, lewdness, deceit, rivalry, craze and hindrance come out of the hearts of people. Such evil images are what God refers to as the fundamental evil image of human beings.

Yet despite this, many people in this world go on living without accepting their fundamental evils. As long as their evil acts are not revealed, they do not accept the fact that they themselves are evil and headed for hell. This is the reason why there are so many people who do not accept



the gospel of the water and the Spirit. But because God, who has created us, knows that we are fundamentally evil beings, He goes on to say, "You are such an evil being." Although God had established the Law in order for us to realize our evil existence, many still continue not to acknowledge their evils. Instead, they try to cover up their blemishes with fig leaves, that is, with their own religious lives. This is the most evil image of human beings.

However, no one can hide his shameful sins with any sort of religion in this world. Anyone who wishes to cleanse his sins must believe that Jesus Christ came to this earth for him, received baptism for him, died vicariously for him on the Cross, and was resurrected for him. Only by believing so can one's sins disappear. I hope you will also receive salvation from your sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ. The Lord wants people to

throw away their evils and become those who do righteous works by seeking after His Truth. My dear fellow believers, in order to follow the righteousness of God, one has to believe only in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and follow Jesus Christ.

Today's Scripture passage said that when God looked at the dry land and the land springing forth fruit trees and herbs that yield seeds, He saw that "it was good." God has given the salvation of the remission of sin to all those who recognize their evil images, and He has made them bear the fruit of righteousness by preaching Jesus Christ, the fruit that looks so beautiful in God's eyes.



## **Do You Believe in the Salvation of Jesus Christ Who Came by the Water and the Blood?**

The born-again accept into their hearts and believe in the Truth of the baptism that Jesus Christ received at the Jordan River. The reason Jesus Christ was born into this world was to save us from our sins, and as Jesus Christ took upon our sins through His baptism, He was crucified to death in order to bear the condemnation of our sins. After His death, Jesus Christ was resurrected on the third day to bring us, His believers, back to life again, and He is now sitting at the right hand of God the Father.

Dear fellow believers, do you believe that Jesus Christ is God Himself, and in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given us? This faith is precisely the faith that lets your

souls receive the remission of your sins. Should you not have such faith, you shall only go on living as someone who reeks of a fowl smell, for you would be rotten by hypocrisy. Now, however, we can enter Heaven and live forever by believing in the righteousness of the Lord who came to us by the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

I admonish you all now to acknowledge your wickedness and be saved from all your sins by believing in the Word of the Truth. As for those who have already become righteous by believing in the gospel, I ask you to spend all your remaining lives as the servants of righteousness by accepting and believing in God's Word of Truth. The true salvation of God comes to those who discard their hypocrisy and acknowledge their evil existence. To those who acknowledge their true selves, God has given the blessing of



receiving the remission of their sins and the Holy Spirit.

God doesn't work in our carnal thoughts, but rather, He works in our hearts through the Word of Truth. God sows the seeds of His Word in people's hearts, and has them sprout, blossom, and bear fruits in the heart.

In John 1:12, the Lord said, *"But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name."* The Lord is saying to us, "I am the gate of Heaven. I have saved you with the blue, purple, and scarlet thread of the screen gate of the Tabernacle." God has made us His people and His children, and He has said, "I will personally become your Father and Shepherd." Only when we accept into our hearts the Word of Truth that God has spoken to us, can the flower of salvation blossom in our hearts and bear the fruit of the Holy Spirit.

A true life of faith is possible only when we believe in the Word of God with our hearts. It is by believing in the Word of God with our hearts that we are able to bear the fruit of salvation, and it is when we believe in this Word that we can praise God from the bottom of our hearts, serve Him, and receive all the blessings of Heaven. We must bear in mind what God said here in today's Scripture passage: *"Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth,"* (Genesis 1:11). I admonish you all to remember that the earth here actually refers to your hearts and mine, and that it is in our hearts that God works through His Word.

If the Word of Jesus Christ were not in our hearts, our hearts would not be able to give out anything. In such hearts, there is nothing beneficial. Such hearts would only be void. They





would only be empty hearts. Man-made thoughts lie in the flesh, but the heart lies separately in spirit. A heart without the Word of Jesus Christ is empty, and there is nothing in it. It is when our hearts believe in the Word spoken to us by God that the herb that yields seed and the tree that bears fruit start to grow in our hearts.

We have received salvation and become God's children by believing in His Word with our hearts, and we have also attained eternal life by believing in this Word of God, who is above in the true Heaven. We have received all the blessings of God into our hearts. Is this indeed the case for you and me alike? If we rely on our thoughts, many odd questions often come up. However, we must drop all such thoughts of the flesh, and rely only on God's Word of Truth. Where did God perform His work? He worked in our hearts through the Word. In your hearts and mine, God is saying, "I have saved you by the

water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit, and thus, I have made you My child. You are My child. You are my offspring. You are righteous."

## **The Word of God Is the Gospel Seed That Leads Us to Salvation**

God speaks to our hearts. He says, "I am your God." Where does the Word of God land? It lands on those who believe in God's gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. Here, the water above the heavens falls on the earth, moistens the earth, and lets life sprout from that earth. The Word of God, that is, the water above the heavens, is the seed of life. It is said that God's seed of life lies in His Word, not the earth. All seeds fall on the earth, and by burrowing into the ground and sprouting the bud of life inside the ground, they grow into grass, herbs, or trees.



These seeds grow up to become cabbages, apple trees, or pear trees and bear fruit.

In other words, the earth cannot do anything by itself. It is because God works on the earth with water that His work is realized. Various grass, seed-yielding herbs, and fruit-bearing trees sprouted from the earth precisely because the Word of God fell on the earth and the earth accepted the Word as the seed of life. When we believe in God, how should we believe? To believe in the Word of God is to believe in God. What does God say to us?

God says that He has blotted out our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that He has given us the divine blessings of Heaven. God said that He has made us His children with the fine woven linen and the blue, purple, and scarlet thread of the door of the Tabernacle. And so, we are now the children of God who believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

Then, what relationship are we in with God? We can call God our Father. And we also call Him our Lord, for God is our Master and the Savior. It is through our faith in this Word of the Truth, which God has spoken to our hearts, that we are now leading a true life of faith. We cannot lead a proper life of faith by following our own thoughts. A true life of faith is possible only when we believe in the Word of God with our hearts. Praising God is also something that we do with our hearts. We must know the fact that it is in your hearts and mine that God works. I ask you all to believe that God has already worked in your hearts through the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit.



## The Gospel of God That Came from Above the Heavens

In Israel, there is a peculiar lake called the Dead Sea. No life can survive in that place. The Jordan River that starts at the Lake of Galilee flows into it, and all the water from the valleys of Israel is fed into it. Just the surface of the Dead Sea alone is approximately 400 m below sea level. Because there is no other place lower than the Dead Sea, all the water that flows into the lake cannot be drained to anywhere else, and as the water evaporates rapidly due to the region's hot climate, the saline level of the Dead Sea water is very high. So there is no fish in the Dead Sea, and no life can survive there. Along the coastlines of the Dead Sea, hardly any grass or trees are able to grow.

The world of human thoughts is like the Dead Sea. The Word of God does not work inside

human thoughts. If the Word of God should fall into the seawater, God's work would not take place. If the Word of God should fall into the sea of our fleshly thoughts, no life would be able to sprout and grow. For this reason, we should lead our lives of faith by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Having faith in the Lord is also realized by believing in the Word of God. We must believe in the Word of God with our hearts.

People have added a title to Hebrews chapter 11 identifying it as the chapter of faith. If we look at Hebrews 11:24-31, it is recorded, *“By faith Moses, when he became of age, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin, esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt; for he looked to the reward. By faith he forsook*



*Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured as seeing Him who is invisible. By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, lest he who destroyed the firstborn should touch them. By faith they passed through the Red Sea as by dry land, whereas the Egyptians, attempting to do so, were drowned. By faith the walls of Jericho fell down after they were encircled for seven days. By faith the harlot Rahab did not perish with those who did not believe, when she had received the spies with peace.”*

Besides Moses and Rahab mentioned in the passage above, numerous people of faith are also mentioned in Hebrews chapter 11. What sort of faith was their faith? Theirs was one that believed with their hearts in the Word that the servants of God had delivered to them. Because Moses and Rahab believed in the Word of God, they were able to live, taste the great work of

God, and attain their salvation. We were also able to receive our true salvation by believing in the Word of God with our hearts. Now, we must go on living our lives of faith by trusting in the Word of God with all our hearts.

We must follow Christ by our faith in the Word of God. No matter how much we rely on our thoughts by ourselves, there is no gain. A thought is just a thought. It is nothing more than that. We are able to blossom the flower of faith only by believing in the water above the heavens, that is, the Word of God. This is the true life of faith.

In the past, the predecessors of faith who had lived by faith walked in accordance to the Word of God, believing in this Word above the heavens, in God's Word of covenant. Joseph was confident that the people of Israel would enter the land of Canaan in the future because he had believed in the promise of God handed down to



him by the ancestors of faith. That is why, upon his deathbed, he spoke these last words, “Even if I die, God will have you enter the land of Canaan in the future. When the time comes and you leave the land of Egypt, make sure to dig up my bones and carry them with you into the promised land.” Joseph spoke his last words like this because he believed in the Word that God had said to Abraham—that God would save the people of Israel after 400 years of bondage and lead them to enter the land of Canaan once more. Accordingly, the people of Israel, when they left the land of Egypt, dug up and took Joseph's bones with them into the land of Canaan where they had buried them. This is what faith is all about. Where did God perform His work? He performed it on the earth. It means that God worked in our hearts.

What is in our hearts? The fact is that faith is there. What is the true nature of faith? It is

having faith in the Word above the heavens, that is, the Word of God. That is precisely what faith is. Believing with all our hearts in the Word of God who is in Heaven, the Word that falls upon our hearts, the Word of God that has been granted to us—this is what faith is. We must all know what faith really is.

If we were to say that there is one truly precious treasure in our hearts, then that would have to be our wholehearted faith in the Word of God. A heart that has faith is what is precious, and a heart without faith is merely full of fleshly thoughts. Any thought that comes out of the flesh of mankind is just a thought; it is not something that comes out of the Word of Truth. The sea or the earth itself has no life in it. It is only the water above the heavens—that is, the Word of Truth and the seed of life—that falls down and makes this earth blossom beautiful flowers, sprout out herbs, and bring forth trees to bear



fruits. The fact is that all these beautiful herbs, flowers, and fruits came into existence by the Word of God who is in the heavens.

Soil has no other work but to accept anything that it is given. The earth did nothing else but accept the seed when it fell. The point that I am trying to convey to you is that it is not the proper faith to accept into our hearts what we have created with our own thoughts and logic and believe in them. Faith built on top of human thoughts sways back and forth like the waves on a beach, and it creates foams of doubt. It is always shaky because this faith created by human thoughts sometimes seems reasonable, but not so reasonable at other times. Our man-made thoughts as human beings are always like this, wavering back and forth. Isn't it so? Aren't fleshly thoughts like that? Yet, if we were to discern everything with the Word of God, everything would become clear.

True faith has nothing to do with the thoughts that come out of the flesh of mankind. God does not perform the work of life upon the thoughts of people. When God's Word of Truth falls on the earth, the seed of the Truth of life flowers and bears fruit. What has all the power to make the seawater and the earth yield flowers and bear fruit? It is the God's Word of Truth.

I hope that you shall all now realize that the Word of God has blossomed and worked on the earth. It is not in our carnal thoughts that God's work of life unfolds, but rather, it unfolds in the hearts that believe only in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God approves our faith only when we believe in the His Word with all our sincere hearts. Yet despite this, there aren't that many people who believe in the Word of God with their hearts. The Word of God is the Truth, and it has power. It is said, *"For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for*



*pulling down strongholds,” (2 Corinthians 10:4).* Faith in the Word of God becomes a powerful weapon that pulls down the strongholds of Satan, and those who have such faith will receive overflowing blessings from God.

A proper faith cannot be grown with fallacious beliefs, accumulated by our attempt to understand and accept the Word of God with our own carnal thoughts. Such faith always sways like a wave, believing one moment, and then becoming faithless the next minute. Our faith must never be merely a religious faith. One can never blossom the flower of true faith by relying on his own thoughts. I want you all to realize that God does not work in our thoughts of the flesh of mankind. Where, then, does God perform His work? He works on top of the faith of believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is the Word of God. The work of God truly occurs only when we believe in God with our hearts.

The fact is, only when we believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Word of God, did God give us salvation, make us His children, answer our prayers, strengthen us, and allow us to bear many spiritual fruits.

God has worked in your hearts through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Even now, He continues to work in your hearts and mine through this gospel of the water and the Spirit. My fellow believers, do you believe in God with the thoughts of your flesh, or do you believe in God with your hearts, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? Is there faith in the Word of Truth inside you? While believing in God, one must forego human thoughts. Let us forego using thoughts in living our everyday life, and let us believe in God by placing our faith in His Word.

It is because God works in our hearts that we believe in Him with all our hearts, praise Him



with our hearts, follow Him with our hearts, pray to Him with the full confidence of our hearts, and labor as His workers with our hearts. Because I believe that God is my Father, I am able to offer my prayer of faith with every confidence and say, “Father, please grant me this.”

## The Word of God Works Inside Us

All on His own, God had said, “*Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind,*” (Genesis 1:11). Just as this Word of Truth that God had spoken all on His own fell to the earth—in other words, just as the seed fell—the earth accepted the seed and fruit was yielded. There wasn’t anything else that the earth had done. The earth did not act frivolously by itself, nor did it sacrifice itself to make water. All it did

was to take in the seed falling from above and have the seed of the Truth sprout and flower by gathering up nutrients in the ground around it. Also, if we recognize, the earth is something that God has created. There is nothing that we have done by ourselves.

Therefore, if one had led his life of faith according to what he had thought was good, then it would be all in vain. If he had led his life of faith by thinking, “Would I still be deemed to be principled by others if I were to lead my life of faith like this? What would be an easier way of running my church? What should be done to this Word of God to make it fit into the principles of mankind?” then such a life of faith would have no merit at all. People like this have not been leading a life of faith, but rather, they have been cleverly managing their way of life. To say it very nicely, they have been on a scholarly quest. Such people have been pursuing philosophy that





suits them. If anyone has led his life of faith following what is good according to his own thoughts, instead of believing in the Word of God with his heart, then this can only mean that he has not actually led a life of faith, but only a religious life.

God has worked in our hearts. By working in your hearts and mine, God has made us into His children. Is this true or not? Of course it's true! Now, we have become God's children. Did we become God's children by our own thoughts? No, we didn't. If we had relied on our thoughts to be saved, we would have never become sinless, for it would have been like grasping for the wind.

How, then, did we become God's children? We have become His children by believing in God's gospel Word that has blotted out all our sins. In our thoughts, when we commit a sin, we are not entirely sure whether this has disappeared

or not. We move back and forth in our carnal thoughts, but our hearts clearly testify to us, "There is no sin." All the people of faith, whether they were Moses, Joshua, or Rahab the harlot, resolved all their problems by faith.

We are able to lead a proper life of faith by believing in the Word of God with our hearts. If we believe in the Word of God with our hearts, the seed of life that is inside the Word enters into us and works in us. And it sprouts a bud of life. This is something that we can never do on our own, and although there is no such beauty in our hearts, God still brings forth beautiful buds to sprout, flowers to blossom, and fruits to be borne. In other words, God makes us do beautiful works. Who works with what? God works with the Word of Truth. The seed of Truth then enters us, and this seed does beautiful works inside us.

The Truth makes us spread the gospel to other souls, do the work of serving God, do the work



of following the Lord by faith, and do the work of fighting against the Devil and winning. It is the Truth that enables us to do these things. We alone cannot do such things. No matter how zealously we may try, we can never do them. In other words, we cannot lead a life of faith based on our own thoughts. You can never receive the gospel of salvation if your hearts are set like the following: "I'll think about it and if I can understand it, I will believe. But, if I cannot understand it despite having looked at the Word and having listened to it over and over, then I will never believe it. I mean I will believe only the part that I can understand." If you are bound by such a thought, then you must throw it away quickly.

Faith is something simple. All one does is simply meditate on the Word of God with his heart and just believe in the Word. The Truth is also something simple. The Truth is just the

Truth. It is not rendered untrue just because we think so, nor is its validity affirmed by our own thoughts. The Truth is not made true just because we accept it, nor is it made untrue just because we reject it. The Truth is just the Truth. It is something that never changes.

## **Human Thoughts: Barriers to a Life of Faith**

Through the work of creation, God revealed the work that He wanted to perform on us humans. On the first day, God spoke of the work of salvation. On the second day, He spoke of the work of separation. On the third day, He spoke of how one is to become a person of faith. Nonetheless, there are many people whose faith hasn't reached the third day. In order to become servants of God, they have to accept this work of



God done on the third day of His creation. On the fourth day, God created the stars in the sky. Then, on the fifth day, the work of flying about to one's content and swimming underwater by faith, reigning over everything by faith, and enjoying everything to its fullest becomes realized.

What is the greatest obstacle to the work of the third day being realized in our hearts? It is our fleshly thoughts. It's not just any kind of thoughts. It is the thoughts of the flesh. Many people are leading their lives of faith by their own thoughts of the flesh. Since that is the case, one's life of faith is at the beck and call of thoughts, and lest it should not be so according to one's thoughts, then it is the case that the life of faith becomes discouraged. No matter how much one pledges by thinking to himself, "Alas! This seems right. So, let's believe. I believe," if this faith isn't based on the Word of God, then, when

some hardship approaches, everything gets blown away in a single shot. His faith would die.

For example, when a typhoon lands on a shore, it wrecks havoc on the shorelines. It is like a tidal wave sweeping by all at once, flooding out houses near the shore and wiping out the beach and the breakwater without a trace. It is the thoughts of the flesh that eats away faith. As one thinks more and more of his own flesh, his faith would disappear accordingly. In time, his faith would completely disappear without even a trace. When one is drawn more and more to his own carnal thoughts, it would blow away even those things that he had believed of in the first place, and, eventually, whatever little faith that might be left would be completely wiped out.

There are two types of people: people who believe in the Word with their hearts and people who lead their lives of faith according to what they think is good. As for those who go on



leading their lives of faith with their own thoughts, they still do not know where God had worked on the third day. My fellow believers, we must believe in God's Word with our hearts. We must meditate on it with our hearts, and believe in it with our hearts. It is with our hearts that we must believe. And it is with our hearts that we must follow. Only then will the work of God unfold.

For those who take the Word of God only at the level of their thoughts and not believe in it with their hearts, when they listen to the Word, they tend to listen as if they were listening to some history lecture, thinking to themselves, "That's not the main theme of that passage... Hmm, he's speaking about faith today. I suppose the passage could be interpreted like that."

I am not lecturing on history now. I am not saying, "The time of Moses was some years B.C., and the culture at the time was so and so. In

that culture, Moses became the leader of the nation of Israel in such and such ways. It was great. Let's all be like Moses." Rather, what I am saying to you is that all the faith of the people of God, whether it be the faith that Moses had, the faith that Rahab had, or the faith that Joshua had, was based on believing in the Word of Jehovah with their hearts. God is saying that this is the realm of faith.

When you read this sermon, if you were to try to accept it after having understood it, then all you would be doing is just probing. Do you know so much as to accept the Word of the Bible only after having understood it? It would be too late if you were to try to understand it, assess it for yourselves, and then accept it with your own thoughts. You would only be able to understand what is being said now after 10 years, no, perhaps after 20 years. It may very well take 20 years for you to come to say, "Alas, this is why



Pastor Chang had said so back then.” Maybe, if you were to continue leading your lives of faith with your own thoughts, then this realization may not come even after 20 years have passed. Perhaps you might have already died before you are awakened to such an understanding. Your thoughts are your enemy.

As we carry on with our lives of faith, while it's acceptable for us to think about the Word of God with our heart's faith, if we were to judge God's Word, nurture our faith, and plan our future all with our own carnal thoughts, then our very thoughts would be our own enemy. We must not lead our lives of faith with our own thoughts. We must believe in what God has told us, that a life of faith that is led by one's own thoughts, where he tries to understand the Word and plan ahead all with his own thoughts, is no life of faith.

## Where Does God Work?

On the third day, God commanded the earth to bring forth the herb that yields seed and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind. God did not say this to the sea. For us, the first day of God's creation has passed. The second day has also passed. The water above the firmament was divided from the water of this earth. Do you now know what is the Word of God and what are the words of the Devil?

Now, we are faced with the third day. When the second day passes, the third day will certainly arrive. Indeed, the third day has already come to us. On the third day, two phenomena occurred. God gathered together the waters that were covering the earth into one place, and called them the seas. And He called the exposed dry land the earth. This means that God divided the seas from the earth perfectly. Between the two



that were divided, on which one did God perform His work? He worked on the earth. It was to the earth that God said, *“Bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind,”* (Genesis 1:11). God sowed the seed on the earth, and through the earth, He brought forth fruits. He revealed His glory by doing so. That is why it was said that God saw it to be good.

Then how did God work on us? He worked in our hearts. He performed His work in the hearts of those who believed. We have received our salvation by faith. We have become children of God by faith. We have been saved from the judgment by faith. By faith, we call God as our own Father. By faith, we go on leading a life of faith. By faith, we follow the Word of God. Everything is done by faith.

However, what we must know is that there still are some brothers and sisters, and even some

servants of God, who haven't yet passed the third day. They judge the Word with their thoughts, even now. The Word of God is an object of faith and the Truth, not an object of our judgment and analysis. No matter how much we might analyze the Word of God with our own human minds, no fault can ever be found in it. As such, we must give up this futile attempt at our own understanding and start believing with our hearts. We must believe in all the Word that God had promised us and completed, and in all the remaining promises that He will no doubt fulfill for us.

How have you led your lives of faith until now? When you listen to the Word of God or when you read the Bible, do you perhaps put it on hold because you can't quite grasp it, neither believing in it nor accepting it, until you are finally able to understand it?



When we go to an office, we would see filing trays marked 'decided,' 'undecided,' and 'reserved,' lying on top of the desk of someone in high position. What does the 'decided' tray hold? It holds documents on which the final decision has already been made. What about the 'undecided' tray? It contains documents on which no decision has yet been made. Items in the 'reserved' tray are issues that one has reviewed favorably, but hasn't been able to make the final decision yet.

We may also describe someone's faith as decided, undecided, and reserved. Among these different types of faith, the one that God hates the most is the reserved faith. A reserved faith is a faith that is neither hot nor cold, but just lukewarm and halfhearted. Although the Word is true, one puts it off for now because it does not agree with his thoughts, so that he would be able to believe it later when it does suit his thoughts.

If one were to thus put off his life of faith indefinitely, wouldn't it seem ridiculous and completely unreasonable in God's view?

Perhaps God would say, "Hey! Are you that smart so as to say that you will judge My Word on your own, and believe it if you can understand, but not believe it otherwise? How have I saved you then? Were you able to receive salvation because you had understood? Hey! You are trying to lead your life completely with your own thoughts, even though you have received salvation by grace. You are trying to live your life of faith only with your own understanding."

This thing called faith does not presuppose understanding. Faith is the substance of things hoped for and the evidence of things not seen. The Bible says that the elders of faith in the past knew that God had built this whole world not because they understood every aspect of God's



creation, but because they believed in the Word of God (Hebrews 11:1-3).

My fellow believers, were we there when God was making this world with His Word? Did we see it? Did we witness God creating the seas? Did we see when God was creating the earth, mankind, and our grandfathers and grandmothers? No, we saw none of them. Yet how do we know that God created the whole universe and everything in it? I am saying that we know of it by faith.

In the beginning, God created the entire universe. We know this fact by believing in the Word of God, which says that God created the heavens and the earth. The fact that we have received salvation is something that also came by faith. The fact that God has become our Shepard is something that we know by faith as well. Everything is by faith. Going to Heaven is also something that's accomplished by faith.

## **Reserved Faith Is a Fearful Enemy**

To our faith, a reserved faith is the most fearful enemy. An undecided faith actually has fewer problems. Because it is a faith held by those who haven't yet met the Word, all one has to do is to tell them of the Word of the Truth and then guide them. However, when it comes to the reserved, no one knows when they would take the final decision that was put on hold. We may hold off on the things of the world, but there is no need for us to face a loss by stubbornly taking the reserved faith. Indeed, it is far better and far wiser for us to be made into the blessed light by believing in the Word of God. It would be truly foolish if one were to accept the Word of God only as a matter of knowledge and to keep it buried under his clouded thoughts. Here is a sumptuous meal prepared for you to eat, but if you were to just gaze at it and not eat it despite





being hungry, then all that deal would just be a pie in the sky. A reserved life of faith is just like this.

The biggest stumbling block for the born-again is the fact that they wish for God to work in their thoughts, not believing in the fact that it is in our hearts that God works, just as He worked on the earth on the third day of creation. This is wrong. It has been laid down that when God works, He works on the earth, in our human hearts. He has established His rule of work, saying, "I will continue to work forever in your hearts, even in the future."

However, many people still expect something preposterous. Those who try to lead their lives of faith according to their own thoughts are all confused, thinking, "This seawater is also water, so God should work on the seawater also. Ah, my head seems to be blocked. It's too difficult to understand." Just as the waves constantly splash

at the beach, when they stand before the Word, they hastily try to understand it beforehand by thinking on their own. The Word of God is something that simply has to be believed.

When we play soccer, it's all clear what we are supposed to do. Once we know to which team we belong, we know instinctively that we should pass the ball to players on our side and shoot the ball into the other team's goal. When we kick the ball, we don't mull over what to do, thinking, "To whose side should I pass the ball?" Since I know clearly on which side I am playing, I am able to play the game with thorough consistency. However, if I were not sure of even this basic rule, that is, if I were not certain whether I was on this team or that team, then I could very well be scoring against my own team.

The Word of God is something that one has to simply believe like a young child. If we were to hold off placing our faith in the Word of God,



then this Word of God cannot be made ours, but if we accept it by faith, then God's Word will be all ours. Yet despite this, many of you don't realize just how much loss is incurred because of your reservation, holding off your final decision to place all your faith in the Word of God. In the past, my fellow believers, I was also like you, unwilling to take the leap of faith to completely trust in God's Word.

People try to understand the Word of God with their own thoughts, again and again. Looking at Jesus Christ washing Peter's feet in John chapter 13, one may think, "People wore sandals at that time, and so their feet must have been covered in dust and they would have had to wash them everyday. I suppose that is why such an incident occurred." Of course, this take isn't completely off the mark by 100%, but that isn't why Jesus Christ had washed Peter's feet. Because these people think too much while they

listen to the Word, they go on listening with their arms crossed, as if to say, "Can I trust that servant of God? What is that person saying now? I'll listen for now, but only once."

We have to listen to the Word with our hearts, once we know that the servant of God preaching it is saying God's Word, not his own words. For many people, however, nothing is set in their hearts by faith precisely because they listen without discerning whether what they are hearing is indeed the Word of God or someone else's own words. If these people were to listen to my sermons, perhaps they would say, "See him talking about soccer! Isn't everything about himself?"

Truthfully, the soccer story told in this hour was also from the Word of God. Isn't it so? But those who lead their lives of faith based on their own thoughts love to pick and choose when they listen to the Word. On their own, they decide



some to be the Word of God, and others not be so. It is because they pick on the Word like this that many of them are holding off, refusing to believe in the Word in its entirety. And as they put off their decision, faith doesn't get to take root and grow in them. Other people grow in faith rapidly every day, but those who have many thoughts about their own growth see hardly any growth at all. And, even at that, their faith grows just a little bit after having suffered to a great degree as if trying to remove porridge from a bowl.

The Word of God works in people's hearts. We must believe in this Truth. The Word of God never works in our thoughts. If you were to say to God, "Dear God, I think it's this way. What do You think, God?" then He would answer, "Oh, yeah? Forget about Me then! Since you think you know it all, do whatever you want to do. You are all on your own now."

God wants to share communion with us through our hearts, and He wishes to share love and play together inside our hearts. He wants the flower to blossom. God wants to enter into the earth, plant flowers, herbs, and fruit trees on this dry land, and show us His mysterious ways.

The fact is that God wants to root the true gospel in our hearts, and to blossom the flowers of the gospel and bear the spiritual fruits through us. You must know this. Do you understand? You must renounce your past lives of faith that were lived just by your own thoughts. Even if you were to think for hundreds of days, nothing would come from it. It would all be nothing more than a waste of time and energy.



## The People of Faith Who Believe in the Word of God

We must carry out our lives of faith with the believing heart. Take a look at all these people in Hebrews who had lived by faith. One of them, Rahab the harlot, heard a rumor saying, “To the people of Israel, who had traveled across the Red Sea, there is a divine being, God, who is called Jehovah. Because God was with them, they were delivered from the tens of thousands of the Egyptian army, and this God named Jehovah wiped out the entire Egyptian army by drowning all of them in the sea. Such a great divine being is with the people of Israel.”

Though the harlot was a stranger, she had believed in her heart, saying, “If such a divine being should exist, then I will believe. I believe in the divine being who has saved the people of Israel as my God.” Eventually, when the time

came, scouts from the people of Israel came into the city of Jericho in the land of Canaan where Rahab was living.

Historians claim that the walls of the city of Jericho were so wide and strong that two 8-ton trucks could have been driven back and forth at the top. Because the walls were built in two layers, inside and out, it is said to have been very wide. So the walls were perfect for a defense. To human thoughts, these walls could never be crumbled. At the time, when the city was attacked, the invading army used battering rams to break down city gates and storm into the city, but because even the gates of Jericho were so enormous and the walls were so impeccable, it was widely believed that the city of Jericho could not be taken down, and no army would be able to penetrate it. At the top of the walls, a harlot named Rahab was operating a tavern. Rahab had



set up a tavern on top of those walls, and her family had been making a living by selling wine.

However, this harlot Rahab, who had heard about Jehovah, the God of the people of Israel, believed in God with her heart, saying, "If God were like that, I would also believe in God," and when the scouts came, she hid them with such faith. These scouts had come into her tavern and, in order to spy, they were eavesdropping on what the people were saying while they drank. But the harlot Rahab knew that they were Israelites. However, another man at Rahab's tavern also realized that some strangers had come into his city, and he went off to inform the king. In the meanwhile, the harlot Rahab took the scouts into hiding.

As she was hiding them, she asked, "Are you people of Israel?"

"Yes, we are."

"I heard the news about your God, Jehovah. I heard that this God is the God who had saved a nation from the Red Sea. Is it true?"

"It is true."

"If that is true, and if God wants to take this city, then this city will fall. In that case, I have one condition. I will hide you, but when your people take down this city, I want you to save me and my family." The scouts then made an agreement with her that they would save her family.

Rahab hid them under the stalks of flax she had laid on the roof and told them, in full detail, how to escape safely. The harlot Rahab had sent off the scouts by believing in God, Jehovah. And, when the people of Israel came to invade, the harlot Rahab, according to the agreement, bound a scarlet cord outside the window. The Bible makes a record of the fact that all the lives of Rahab's family were spared in accordance with



the order issued by Joshua, “Kill not even a single person inside the house that has a scarlet cord.”

What sort of an act was Rahab's act? Was it something done in her own thoughts? No, it wasn't. It was done by faith. Although Rahab's thoughts may have splashed like the wave, unsure of what she should do, she still had faith. If there were no faith in her heart believing that the truly divine being was the Jehovah God who had saved the people of Israel from the Red Sea—that is, if she had not believed in God with her heart—then she could not have been able to do such acts.

The faith by which the harlot Rahab was saved is the same faith that allows everyone to reach his salvation by believing in the blood (red thread) of Jesus Christ, who was baptized at the Jordan River in order to take on our sins. As for us, it is also by the faith of believing in the

gospel of the water and the Spirit that we attain our salvation.

Even for Moses, it was by faith that he led the people of Israel out of Egypt, and it was by this faith that he became one of the people of God. Moses threw away his rights as a king as if they were worthless. He believed, “I am not the prince of one single nation. Instead, I am a part of the people of God, and a son of the King of kings. I am not a prince of this world. Instead, I am a prince of the Kingdom of God.” Because he had such faith, he was able to throw away the power and the glory of a prince.

My fellow believers, because this Moses believed in the Word of God with his heart, and because he believed in the Word of God spoken to his ancestors, he was able to share joy and sorrow with the people of Israel and live together with them. All this was because he had believed with his heart. Where in the people of faith did



God perform His work? It is in their hearts that God performed His work.

Where, then, does God work on us the saints? He works on the earth. He works in your hearts and mine. God has already worked in your hearts and mine. However, as if trying to find a place with a wrong address, there are many occasions when we try to do the work of God at sea. Even now, some people try to understand the Word with their thoughts, but God has already performed His work in their hearts.

We must throw away our own thoughts, and by believing in the written Word of God with our hearts, we must receive salvation and lead a life of faith. This is what a life of faith is. My fellow believers, do you believe in this? When we sing praises, we should sing by believing in God with our hearts, and when we lead our lives of faith, we should lead by believing in the Word of God with our hearts. This is what faith is all about.

It is my hope and prayer that you would all lead your lives of faith by believing in the Word of God with your hearts, and thus receive all the blessings that God has given you. ☒



## **We Can Be Saved from All Our Sin Only When We Know All Our Wickedness**

**<Genesis 1:9-13>**

**“Then God said, ‘Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear’; and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth, and the gathering together of the waters He called Seas. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth’; and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, the herb that yields**

**seed according to its kind, and the tree that yields fruit, whose seed is in itself according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. So the evening and the morning were the third day.”**

The message from today’s Scripture passage is that everyone should know his wickedness and bear the fruit of salvation.

Everyone was born with sin from the very moment he was born into this world, and therefore all human beings cannot avoid but commit countless transgressions throughout their lives. God therefore wanted us to realize and know our own wickedness, and to grasp the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that He has given us. Now, for us to reach faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ, we must first realize our own wickedness.





The reality is that most people are carrying on with their lives completely oblivious to their wickedness. It is because of our own righteousness that we have left God. We cannot recognize our wicked selves, for we are too self-righteous. If we want to be saved from all our sins, we have to be able to see our own wickedness first, and we must also know the righteousness of God and believe in it.

In other words, for human beings to wash away their evils and sins, they must look toward the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit and believe in it. Everyone must grasp his hideous self and wickedness, bow before God, ask for His help, and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has given us. Only then can he be saved. To do so, we must first recognize our evil selves. God's Word is the Word of Truth that saves us from sin. It is to those who acknowledge God's Truth that the

Lord brings salvation and enables them to bear many fruits of faith.

We must realize the Truth that our Lord spoke on the third day of creation. The Bible twice states that on this third day of God's creation, "*God saw that it was good*" (*Genesis 1:10, 12*). Once, God said that He was pleased to see the dry land appearing, and the second time, He said that it was good see the herb that yields seed and the tree that yields fruit.

In the Bible, the earth refers to the human heart. As God gathered together the water covering this earth into one place, He saw the dry land being exposed, and He said that this pleased Him. This implies that God's Word has enabled us to see the many hypocrisies covering our hearts.



## **Why Is God Pleased to See the Appearance of the Dry Land?**

It is because one can be saved only if his basic nature, which is evil, is exposed. Man-made religions are nothing more than systems of hypocrisy. In other words, as human beings have wrapped up their fundamental wickedness with a cover of hypocrisy called religion, they themselves do not realize that they are all evil beings. So, people cannot see their true selves filled with sin, and have fallen into a great delusion, considering themselves virtuous.

That is why unlike human beings, who try to prevent their sins from being exposed, God wants their sins to be revealed. Mankind's sins cannot be hidden from God. God wants to expose people's sins and heal them. It is only after mankind's evils are exposed that God can give

the remission of sin to every sinner, and that is why God is pleased to see our sins fully exposed.

People generally want others to see them as good and virtuous. So they pretend to be good all too often, and fooled by their own hypocrisy, most of them are convinced that they really are virtuous. However, the fact of the matter is that there are so many evils hidden in their hearts, and they all need to realize this.

To whom, then, is the God-given salvation fulfilled? There is no doubt that salvation comes to those who know themselves to be complete sinners, and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord. In other words, only those who admit that they are infallibly bound to hell if they continue in their way can receive the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. What about you then? Don't some of you also think that your hearts are virtuous? Could such people



be saved from their sins? Or is it only by realizing one's evil heart and asking the Lord for His grace that one can be saved from his sins? It is not the former, but the latter that can be saved from sin. Unfortunately, however, there aren't that many people who know and admit the fundamental wickedness of their hearts.

God said, *"The heart is deceitful above all things, And desperately wicked; Who can know it?" (Jeremiah 17:9)*. He also said in Mark 7:21-23, *"For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil things come from within and defile a man."*

The carnal thoughts of mankind can only be evil. By nature, human beings are murderers, adulterers, and debauched beings. They were all fundamentally born as evil beings. It is on those

who know themselves to be such sinners that God bestows His grace of salvation. It is precisely through such people that God bears the fruits of the remission of sin, and the fruits of evangelism as well. In other words, God was saying that He would give His blessing of salvation only to those who realize and believe that they are indeed evil sinners who are harboring such sins in their hearts and gushing with these sins throughout their entire lifetime.

This is completely opposite to the teachings of the world. From our parents and through the educational system, we were taught to consider ourselves as essentially good. There is a prominent theory called "Labeling Theory" that is widespread in the field of juvenile education. This theory insists that if a child were labeled "a liar" by his parents or teachers, the child would become a liar, and that if a child were labeled as "a good boy," then he would likely grow up to be



a man of good character. But, this theory explains only the phenomenon of hypocritical human behaviors, and cannot deal with the fundamental nature of human beings.

Religion is no different; all religions propound on the goodness of mankind and its righteousness. The evilest people in this world are those who hide their evils with false virtues (hypocrisy). Those who believe in Christianity merely as a religion are also such people. Because they do not know their fundamental selves, they do not accept God's gospel that would save them from all their sins—indeed, far from accepting this true gospel, they are actually preaching false gospels that only emphasize mankind's own righteous deeds.

As such, God's worst enemies in this world, who stand against Him the most, are none other than these Christians who have not been born again. They argue, "But still, doesn't mankind

have at least one or two virtues?" The Scripture Word of the Truth, however, declares that mankind has absolutely nothing virtuous (Romans 3:10-12). We must therefore first recognize our true selves, realizing how our hearts are filled with so many carnal thoughts.

The Bible writes that when the third day of the creation of the heavens and the earth began, this earth had been covered with water. This water here refers to the water that was below the firmament. Sometimes, even the water below the firmament may look clear. However, the ground at its bottom, hidden by the water, is in fact very filthy. Only when the filthy bottom is exposed can God cleanse this ground, and that is why He said on the third day, "Let the dry land appear." This implies that as mankind's basic nature is fundamentally evil, God wants us to recognize and admit our transgressions.



Jesus Christ came to call all sinners and save them from every sin. Our Lord said, *“I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance”* (Luke 5:32). God said that evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, lewdness, foolishness, pride, and so on, are all inherent to mankind, that we humans all have such filthy hearts. God cannot bear any fruit through someone who doesn’t fully reveal his sinfulness before the Word of God. But if one knows that he has no merit whatsoever on his own, and that he is nothing more than a sinful being, then he can meet Jesus Christ and be born again.

## **To Whom Has the God-given Salvation Come?**

The salvation of the God-given remission of sin comes only to those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is by believing in what Jesus Christ has done for sinners like us that we are saved through grace (Ephesians 2:8).

The Bible writes that as *“the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually”* (Genesis 6:5), He decided to judge this earth. And God’s judgment did in fact come to this earth, whereby all sinners were destroyed, except for Noah’s family of eight who were saved.

Noah was saved because he found God’s grace, as it is written, *“But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his*



*generations. Noah walked with God” (Genesis 6:8-9).* The word “grace” is synonymous to gift. Noah, too, was a sinner, for he was as weak and insufficient as anyone else, but he was still spared from the judgment and saved. How was this possible? It was possible precisely because Noah and his family found the grace of the remission of sin from God, and were made righteous. In other words, it was by believing in the God’s grace of salvation that Noah became a righteous man.

God saved Noah by clothing him in His grace. Just like Noah, God has also given us the same grace. Even though our very thoughts and acts are both evil, God has blessed us to become His own people. After making this earth uncovered and dry, God blessed it to bring forth the herb that yields seed and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind. It is when the dry land

appears that the earth begins to bear fruit before God.

In other words, human beings are born again from their sins by first admitting that they are sinners bound to hell, and second, by believing in Jesus Christ, who came by the Truth of the water and the Spirit and has saved sinners from sin. If we realize our sinful state, and take off the mask of hypocrisy covering our hearts, we, too, can receive the remission of our sins and bear every good fruit, all by accepting the Word of God and believing in it.

## God Abhors Hypocrites

Those who pretend to be virtuous before God do not know the Truth of being born again of water and the Spirit. The religionists who hide their evils behind their good-natured smiles are



typical hypocrites. Why are they so hypocritical constantly? It's because they want to hide the fact that they themselves are sinners bound to hell. Neither hearing the Word of God nor heeding to the voice of their own conscience, they pretend to be righteous people, even as they are sinners. Since they don't admit the fact that they will be cast into hell for their sins, nor do they have any desire to receive the remission of their sins. That is why they snub the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

There are too many people in this world deluded into believing that they are really good people. Those who are under this illusion to think of themselves as virtuous before God—that is, those who do not admit to God that they are evil sinners—are all hypocrites. Those who boast their hypocrisy and seek after works-oriented faith are hypocrites who do not follow the Truth of being born again, which is what really pleases

the Lord, but only their own rightfulness. God abhors the hypocrisy of mankind—that is, He abhors false virtues.

So you should realize here that the false goodness of mankind is a mortal sin that stands against the true goodness of God and leads one to hell. For evil human beings to try to cover their whole wickedness with their hypocrisy is like covering their own eyes to see no evil. When you tip a bottle of soy sauce, what pours out is soy sauce. Clear water is not poured out of a bottle filled with soy sauce. Likewise, when mankind itself is filthy and obscene, how could any goodness come out of it?

Therefore, human beings must first confess their wickedness to God, believe in the Bible, which is the Word of God, and thereby be wholly remitted from all their sins as white as snow. And once they receive the remission of their sins and are made righteous, they should no longer



follow the hypocrisy of mankind, but they must follow only the Word of God by faith. We can cast aside every hypocrisy of mankind and come to follow only the gospel of the real Truth that clothes us with the righteousness of God only when we admit that we are bound to commit sin until the day we die.

My fellow believers, even those who have been saved from all their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit must recognize that as far as their flesh is concerned, they are still evil and filthy. It is through those who admit their evil selves by believing in God's Word of Truth that God reveals His glory and bears the fruit of righteousness. In contrast, the sinners who do not believe in God's Word exactly as it is do not bear any righteous fruit of the true goodness of God. That we are compelled to recognize ourselves as obscene, filthy, and sordid beings is not because we have actually

committed all such transgressions with our acts. Rather, it is because we believe in God's Word that when we reflect ourselves upon this Word, we are compelled to admit ourselves as wicked human beings.

The righteousness of God is held in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. All of us are evil human beings by nature, but because we accepted the gospel of salvation, the gospel of the remission of sin, we were saved and are now living our lives as righteous people. That is how the saved come to cast aside their hypocrisy and preach the righteousness of Jesus Christ, for only this righteousness of Jesus Christ now lives in them. Having received the remission of our sins, it is when we admit that we are still evil that from then on, we are made into the instruments of righteousness used for God's righteous works.

God places no expectations on the hypocrisy of mankind. Hypocrisy is nothing more than a





fraud. So no expectations can ever be placed. Religion, too, is a pile of hypocrisy, and so God has no expectations for it.

Hypocrisy leads to self-destruction. Hypocrisy is a sin. It is the obstacle that blocks God's blessings. It is a curse. Hypocrisy is the way to be cursed by God. If anyone wants to receive God's blessings, he must steer clear from hypocrisy. Hypocrisy must be cast aside, for it destroys one's own soul. True goodness is to believe in God and acknowledge oneself.

God does not place His expectations on hypocrites. He places His expectations on those who believe in His Word. God's Church also does not place any expectations on the hypocrisy of mankind. We place no expectations on another human being, no matter who this might be. That's because the flesh of mankind is filled with hypocrisy. Since everyone's flesh is the same, it is an illusion to think, "I'm not like that man; I'm

different from everyone else." Each and every human being is the same pile of sin, but the Lord revealed the righteousness of God to us by becoming the Savior of sinners. He has made it fully exposed that before the Word of God, no one has any righteousness at all.

Do not deceive yourselves. Do not be fooled by your own hypocrisy. No one should give high marks to himself. God Himself said that mankind is a brood of evildoers, and that the human heart is more corrupt than anything else.

However, God's power is so overwhelming that even through such wicked human beings, He still bears the fruit of His righteousness. What has saved us from our sins through the Truth is the very goodness of God and His righteousness. This is the power of God. Isn't it marvelous? The gospel of salvation is the sole Truth that only God has. For us to bear the fruit of Truth, we must realize that we had been complete sinners



and complete hypocrites, and we must believe accordingly.

## **Do You Admit All the Sins Exposed in You?**

Even for those who have been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the very first phenomenon to unfold is that the wickedness of their flesh is exposed more and more. In other words, their wicked selves are more exposed than even before.

The same thing happened to me as well. I hardly had any quarrels with my wife before, but once I received the remission of my sins, I actually became more prone to quarrel with my wife, and my words became even ruder, as if I had forgotten all about my proper education. So after receiving the remission of my sins, I

sometimes wondered to myself, “Why am I like this? Does this mean that perhaps I was not remitted from all my sins? How could I do this?”

God’s Word of Truth makes it clear beyond any doubts that we are indeed evil beings wrapped up in hypocrisy, but because we do not acknowledge the Word of God with our hearts, He makes the dry land appear in our lives. If we do not recognize the written Word of God—that is, the real Truth of goodness—then God’s Word must fight and overcome us, and so God exposes all the evils of mankind through our circumstances. That is why even the born-again are tormented by their evils.

But once they admit such evil selves and trust in God’s Word of Truth, they can bear the fruit of the remission of sin. On our own, we did not know that there were such evils in us, but the Lord exposed our wickedness so that we could not but see and recognize these evils. Having



done this, the Lord then saved us through the Word of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, the more our evils are exposed, the more we should thank the Lord.

As such, everyone should acknowledge God's Word of Truth as soon as possible, thus turning themselves in to God as a brood of evildoers filled with hypocrisy, and be born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the blood given by Jesus Christ. If you really want take pride in the gospel and live in the midst of the light with this gospel and with God, then you must wholly believe in His Word of Truth.

Those whose lives are deceived by their own hypocrisy do not know the Truth that the Word of God teaches, and so their lives turn only more hypocritical. As they find themselves incapable of really living virtuously no matter how hard they try, they even end up giving up their lives of faith. Deceived by their hypocrisy, in other

words, they are unable to lead their lives of faith until the end. Through the Word of Truth, they should have realized what kind of people they are, and they should have cast aside their hypocrisy. Human beings can be saved only if they know their wickedness, and their evils are exposed.

What about you then? Do you admit that you are evil? Do you recognize that mankind is wholly wicked, for 100%? As for myself, I admit wholeheartedly that I was indeed a complete sinner, just as shown in the Word of God. And I believe so. It's because I have nothing to boast, and because no human being has any goodness at all, that Jesus Christ came to this earth, was baptized, and shed His blood, all to take away the sins of evil mankind, each and every sin of the world. All of us have been saved by believing in Jesus Christ our Savior, that is, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



The Holy Spirit bears witness that only the Word of God is the good Truth indeed. And by believing in this Truth, mankind has now been remitted from its sins and become an instrument of righteousness. Had it not been for God, and had it not been for Jesus Christ's Word of Truth that is indeed virtuous, mankind could not have but lived in an unbearable stench, completely corrupted by its hypocrisy. Now, everyone in this world should believe in the Word of salvation, that Jesus Christ has saved us through the baptism He received, the blood He shed on the Cross, and the Holy Spirit, and reach unto his salvation.

I admonish you all to admit your evils, trust in God's Word of Truth, and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, so that you may be saved from all your sins of hypocrisy and live as righteous people. And once you become righteous, I ask you all to live the rest of your

lives as the instruments of the righteousness of God, acknowledging His Word of Truth and believing in His righteousness.

The true salvation given by God comes to those who admit their hypocrisy and cast it aside, and it is to such people who admit their true selves that God has brought this salvation. I give all my thanks to our God. Amen!☒



## **What God's Servants Who Believe in the Gospel Of the Water and The Spirit Must Do**

<Genesis 1:14-19>

**“Then God said, ‘Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years; and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth’; and it was so. Then God made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He made the stars also. God set them in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth, and to rule over the day and over**

**the night, and to divide the light from the darkness. And God saw that it was good. So the evening and the morning were the fourth day.”**

### **Discerning and Sorting out People's Souls Are the Beginning of God's Work**

What did God do through His servants on the fourth day of the creation of the heavens and the earth? He had them separate His people from the rest. God the Father sent Jesus Christ to this earth in order to save everyone from all sins. God raises His servants to use them as His instrument to blot out people's sins. It is to save souls that God gives the gospel of the water and the Spirit and raises His servants who would preach this



gospel. To this end, God nurtures His servants and molds them properly, and then uses them.

God's servants must minister with the calling that obligates them to discern the children of light from the children of darkness on this earth, and to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to them. When God's servants labor for His work, they must examine and discern whether or not people have received the remission of sin.

If the calling of the gospel preachers in this world is to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then they should know how to fulfill this work. Therefore, an evangelist's ministry must first begin from discerning whether the souls before his eyes have been saved from sin or not. If he is incapable of discerning souls, then all his labor would be in vain, and so he must first determine whether or not a certain soul has been saved, and then preach the gospel Word of the

water and the Spirit to sinners. After this, he should then nurture these souls and grow their faith. An evangelist also has the responsibility to preach God's Word of Truth step by step to those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Only those who heard the gospel of the water and the Spirit from the properly nurtured evangelists can spread this gospel to other souls also.

The first thing that an evangelist should do when he meets people is to determine and let them know whether they are God's people or not. Although many in this world call themselves evangelists, few really know the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is why the gospel of the water and the Spirit must be first preached to Christians who profess to believe in Jesus.

We see that some preachers are incapable of discerning whether a soul has been saved or not, for they do not know the gospel of the water and



the Spirit. Every preacher must therefore first know the gospel of the water and the Spirit himself. And he himself must become a believer in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. No evangelist should be ambiguous when it comes to discerning the saved from the unsaved.

The spiritually blind cannot discern whether one has been saved or not. A real witness, in other words, should be able to discern whether this soul believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit or not. When God's servants fail to spread the gospel, it is because of their lack of the ability to discern people's souls that they fail at this ministry. A true witness of the gospel should first examine whether people believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and then sow the gospel seeds of the water and the Spirit. Yet despite this, too many witnesses preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit without first

examining the condition of soul properly, and this is what explains so many failures.

As such, the very first thing that an evangelist must do is to spiritually discern whether a soul is a righteous soul or a sinner. And if this soul still does not know that he is a sinner, then the evangelist must teach him that he will be condemned by God for his sins. The witnesses who are upright before God must know how to determine whether people's souls belong to the light or darkness, and then testify the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Sometimes, when we bear witness, some people do claim to be sinless even though they do not realize the reason why Jesus was baptized.

Representative of such people are those who describe themselves as the so-called Evangelicals. These people blindly claim to have no sin, even though they do not properly know the mystery of the baptism that Jesus received



from John—that is, the gospel of Truth of the water and the Spirit. My fellow believers, although they claim, without knowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit, “I am sinless since I believe in Jesus,” this does not mean that there really is no sin in their hearts. When people assert blindly that they have no sin as long as they believe in Jesus as their Savior, even though they do not know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, they are just deceiving themselves. One may profess to believe in Jesus as his Savior, but if there is sin in his heart, then he is still sinful, and so under such a condition, to claim to have no sin is to deceive God and people. Isn't this the case?

Does every Christian know the gospel of the water and the Spirit? No, not every Christian knows this gospel. There still are far too many Christians who profess to believe in Jesus even as they do not know the gospel of the water and

the Spirit. If this is the case, then we should first determine that spiritually speaking, such Christians are still sinners. The so-called Evangelicals are also this type of people. That is why the Evangelicals must also be awakened spiritually.

A witness who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit before God knows how to live by faith. If a preacher does not lead the congregation properly through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then his entire ministry is bound to fail. It is through the witnesses who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God divides the light from darkness. It is because we minister believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we are able to minister properly. The kind of ministry that is upright before God is one that separates the righteous from sinners, and preaches the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of salvation.





You should now be able to understand that only the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit can fulfill their ministry as true witnesses. That's because those who have been made righteous before God are those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit before Him, and because sinners are those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Ultimately, a preacher must never neglect to divide the righteous from sinners and preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Like this, when a preacher meets someone, the very first step of his ministry is to discern properly whether or not this person has clearly been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If we were to go into a battleground and wage war, how could we fight this war if we cannot even distinguish whether someone right before our eyes is our own soldier or an enemy? To be able to attack with the Word

of Truth and save him, we must first know clearly that this man before our eyes is a spiritual enemy who still has not received the remission of his sins.

A preacher should know the Truth of salvation when he wages his spiritual battle. When he thus frees a sinner and delivers him from the trap of sin, it is only then that he is a true servant of God. In other words, the real witnesses before God must bring true salvation to sinners through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

God shows us His plan through the Word of His creation. He specifically did the work of dividing some things at the beginning of His creation: He divided the heavens from the earth; the light from darkness; the water above the firmament from the water on the earth; and the dry land from the sea. Again, on the fourth day of His creation, God placed two lights in the firmament and divided the day from the night.



So when a preacher deals with souls, it is God's will for him to discern whether these souls have been saved or not. When an evangelist divides souls, he should not divide based on his own carnal standard, but based on the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ.

It's a blessing for us to divide the born-again from those who are not born again based on the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the God-given Truth of salvation. God's Church must fulfill this task of dividing the saved from the unsaved properly. God's work should begin with this task of division. The Kingdom of God can be built only if the preachers who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are able to make the spiritual discernment that divides the light from darkness. Such preachers can fulfill God's ministry as Jesus Christ's workers. As such,

when a preacher is unable to divide the light from darkness, he cannot minister properly.

Among those who have received the remission of their sins, there are many who are so kind-hearted. They say, "When so many people believe in Jesus as their Savior, how can I bring myself to say that they have not been born again?" In particular, the gospel believed by the Evangelicals closely approximates the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but ultimately it is not the perfect gospel, and so they feel rather uneasy to call themselves righteous, for there is still sin in their hearts. In other words, the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we believe is biblically different from their faith.

It's clearly impossible for the witnesses who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit to understand and tolerate those who are not born again, even if they try to do so. In the end, the righteous are separated from sinners. No matter



how hard the real witnesses might try to reach an understanding and collaborate with those working in world-renowned missionary organizations, since these people do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they cannot be approved. Because they do not acknowledge the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they are divided from us eventually.

Ultimately, light and darkness cannot coexist. When you turn on the light at home, darkness recedes away without fail, and when you turn off the light, darkness returns infallibly. It's impossible for both light and darkness to co-exist in a room. When the light is turned on at home, darkness is gone all at once. So even if we, the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, were to try to work together with today's Evangelicals for a while for some purpose, we cannot but declare our separation from them in the end.

### **Some People Also Say, “I Have Received the Remission of My Sins, Am Receiving It Now, and Will I Receive It in the Future”**

A while ago, I once met a missionary belonging to a certain international mission organization and had fellowship with him, but the gospel that he believed was completely different from the gospel of the water and the Spirit that I believed.

I told him that the remission of sin came by all at once by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. But he said that this was not the case. This missionary said, “I have received the remission of my sins, am receiving it now, and will receive it in the future as well.” Most Christians understand and believe so. However, if we think about it just a bit more deeply, we can

see that it's contradictory. Such a faith is a product of today's Christian doctrine of incremental sanctification. Nowadays, Christian leaders throughout the whole world believe in this way, and so what would such leaders preach?

I myself have met many Evangelicals claiming to have no sin. But they said that our sins did not pass onto Jesus through the baptism He received from John the Baptist. So I said to them, "Then show me the proof that it's not true, that the sins of the world did not pass onto Jesus through the baptism He received from John. I will prove to you with the Word of God that our sins were indeed passed onto Jesus through His baptism." They all went away without saying a word. In the end, unless those who cross paths with us submit themselves to the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they will all be separated from us without exception.

So the Evangelicals only believed themselves to be sinless, and they did not believe in the Truth of the baptism Jesus received from John. Clearly, then, they were sinners before God. For a while I tried to be graceful and amicable to them, but I saw how they refused to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit to the end, and not only this, but they even stood against us. They disliked us because we shined the light of Truth believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

My fellow believers, you must grasp that the laying of hands on the head of the sacrificial animal in the Old Testament is the same as the baptism that Jesus received in the age of the New Testament, and you must believe in this. In short, you must understand the gospel of the water and the Spirit and believe in it with your hearts. It is not just through the blood of Jesus alone that you can receive the remission of your sins. The



remission of your sins is obtained through the baptism of Jesus and His blood on the Cross, through these two spiritual truths.

In the Old Testament's time also, there was circumcision and the blood of the Passover lamb (Exodus 12:3-7, 43-49).

Likewise, in the New Testament, there was the baptism of Jesus Christ and His blood on the Cross. 1 John 5:6-8 says that Jesus did not come just by the water, but by the water, the blood, and the Spirit. The Holy Spirit testifies that Jesus is God, and the water and the blood testify of the baptism of Jesus and His Cross. The Bible bears witness that it is through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that our salvation has been achieved. As Jesus Christ came to this earth incarnated in the flesh, He took upon our sins through His baptism just as He had promised with His Word. In the New Testament, the washing away of sin bears witness of the baptism

that Jesus received. The precious blood that Jesus shed tells us that Jesus Christ bore the condemnation of sin when He came to this earth incarnated in the flesh.

Jesus' baptism had been promised in the sacrificial system of the Old Testament. This baptism that Jesus received was not a sudden, accidental event, but it was fulfilled according to the promise of God that had been revealed from the days of the Old Testament. No one can provide any evidence showing that the baptism Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist is not the proof of salvation. So it's only a matter of course for us to be divided from them. It's because our faith is different from theirs that we are distinguished from them. In other words, we have been separated from them because we have now become light, as God has given us the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



How does the night fall on this planet earth? Night falls when the sun is located on the other side of the planet, does it not? When the day breaks, it's also because of the sun. So what determines day and night? It is totally up to the light of the sun. My fellow believers, although we believe in Jesus, it is not by our own will that we seek to be divided from those who are not born again, but it is Jesus Christ who has divided us from them. It's obviously very hard to bear when good human relationships are broken apart because of the Truth. However, before the Word of God, what must be divided must be divided clearly.

When children play hopscotch, they draw lines on the ground. After playing for a while, the lines tend to get smudged. Then the children will draw the lines again to make them clearer. They repeat this throughout the game, drawing the lines again as they fade.

Likewise, after we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must also draw the dividing line again and again. Even after receiving the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we still have to draw the dividing line time after time. Otherwise we are bound to get all confused. For quite a few people, it takes several years to just draw the line of salvation ascertaining that they have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

What about you? After receiving the remission of your sins, how many years did it take you to draw the line just once? It is those who have drawn this line of salvation clearly that are really able to do God's work. It is through these people who can do this work that allows the spreading of the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



## **We Must Draw the Line of Salvation Time after Time by Believing in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

When we have Jesus Christ dwelling in us and we shine His light, the day is divided from the night through Jesus Christ. In other words, those who have accepted the gospel of the water and the Spirit into their hearts are distinguished as the righteous from those who have refused to accept it, who still remain as sinners. God and His servants make this division. That is why we, who are God's servants, must be able to make the division clearly. Do you now understand this? We cannot take on a charitable attitude of tolerance, as if we were good-hearted neighbors next door, not caring how one believes. We must draw the line of demarcation between the saved and the unsaved, no matter what the other people

say about us. This boundary of salvation must not be moved. God said, "*Remove not the ancient landmark, which thy fathers have set.*" (*Proverbs 22:28*), but when we look at the history of Christianity, the landmark has already been removed and the boundary has disappeared.

By what do we confirm the boundary of salvation? It is determined by whether or not one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. However, since the Edict of Milan issued in 313 AD, the nationalized and secularized Christianity set a statute, "Whoever sets a foot inside the church to believe in Jesus shall be baptized," and removed the landmark that God had established for the forefathers of faith. Because of this, the history of Christianity from then on moved in a direction that had nothing to do with God's will and Truth, and today's Christianity has ended up standing against God in His name.



Had the people of those days set the boundary of salvation clearly with the gospel of Truth and kept it, today's Christians would all be found inside the perfect Truth. How wonderful would this have been then? However, Emperor Constantine sought to use Christianity to grab power and stabilize his rule, and so he abolished the dividing authority of the church and made it accept anyone no matter what he believed.

My fellow believers, if we do not make the division, we are bound to get corrupted. As the Truth gets diluted gradually, in the end, nothing can be done to prevent its corruption. That is why you must draw a clear line in your hearts, and you must also draw this line for others as well. Having received the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we the servants of God have drawn this line of salvation everyday.

As I went through my past sermons to organize and edit them into a book, I found out that there was not a sermon that did not discuss the baptism of Jesus Christ and His blood. One element common to all my sermons is that they all discuss Jesus Christ's baptism and blood. Yet despite this, even though I drew the line of salvation repeatedly with the baptism of Jesus Christ, some people still did not draw the line of salvation clearly, and so occasionally, there were some who left God's Church. Even though I drew the line of salvation so many times in God's Church, some people still did not believe in the baptism of Jesus Christ with their hearts.

Such people, in their own thoughts, do not believe that the baptism Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist is a necessary component to their salvation, despite the fact that their leaders have clearly drawn the line of salvation with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and





despite the fact that this line has been drawn based on the Word of God. These people say, "How can such a tiny mission organization be right in everything? Even churches with a long history do not teach such doctrines. And there are so many great Christians in mainstream churches; how can all these people not be saved?" Not only this, but I have seen them actually stand against the gospel. They cannot distinguish what is the real Truth. It's because they do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that they cannot discern the spirit from the flesh.

After hearing the gospel of Truth, many people say, "I don't think that one is saved only if he believes in the water and the blood. I believe that one is saved even if he believes in just the blood of Jesus." This is because many Christian denominations have misunderstood and misbelieved all this time that salvation can be

reached just by believing in the blood of the Cross. That is why we must keep the line of salvation that God has drawn in our hearts through His servants, and whenever it begins to fade away, we must draw it again and again.

However, whenever your flesh is too weak or your hearts are misplaced by any chance, and you commit sin as a result, you must realize that your sins were passed onto Jesus Christ, placing your faith in the baptism that He received. When were all these sins passed onto Jesus Christ? Weren't they passed on when Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist in the Jordan River? Were it not for the baptism Jesus received from John the Baptist, the sins of this world could not have been blotted out. It is through this baptism Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist that all our sins are blotted out and all God's righteousness is fulfilled. If there were no baptism of Jesus Christ, there would be no other way for Jesus



Christ to take away the sins of the world, no matter how ardently He might have desired this. We must draw this line of salvation clearly with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

My fellow believers, the name 'Christ' means "the anointed One" (John 1:14, Daniel 9:25). In the Old Testament, it was kings, priests, and prophets who were anointed. Jesus Christ is our Savior, the High Priest who has blotted out our sins, and the Prophet who teaches us the real Truth. To take out even one of these three is to defy God.

When we preach, "Jesus Christ is our Savior. He has saved us through His baptism and blood," some people say, "That's just the basics of faith, nothing so profound. Instead of such elementary knowledge, teach us something more spiritual."

However, such people must realize that they are actually standing against God and undermining the Church, the Body of Jesus

Christ. Of course, it's important to know God more deeply. However, this is possible only when we are growing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is only in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we can fulfill our role as prophets and learn more about God's Truth. Because God has met us through this gospel of the water and the Spirit, and because God has now become our God, through this gospel, He will also teach us about the things that will come to pass.

## **What Must We Do First to Win Our Spiritual Battle?**

In today's Scripture passage, God said, "*Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years.*" Put



differently, God is saying that He would clearly divide the righteous from sinners through Jesus Christ. This point is indispensable.

Let's assume here that war broke out. When the enemy troops are far away, we shoot them with rifles, but once they get too close for our rifles to be of much use, we get into hand-to-hand combat. We put on the bayonet and charge into the enemy troops, stabbing them with the bayonet and knocking them out with the rifle, singularly focused to win the battle no matter what.

But what if the enemy troops wore uniforms that were similar to ours? How would we then be able to distinguish them from our own troops? How can we stab anyone, when we are not even sure if he is an enemy or our own man? We can't do this. That is why our uniforms must be clearly distinguishable from the enemy troops. In a battleground, soldiers look at the uniform, and if

it's different, then they lunge with the bayonet, no questions asked. They don't even bother to look at the rank, and they just stab if the uniform is different. At this time, if our own soldier is wearing the enemy's uniform, then we would end up stabbing our own man. In other words, our spiritual war must be waged under the clear condition where God has divided people into the saved and the unsaved.

The Word of Jesus Christ is the only Truth. His Word is the light and Truth for this earth. Human thoughts or words are not the Truth. What does the Truth say to us? It said to let there be light in the firmament to divide the day from the night. It commanded the day to be divided from the night; it is only proper for those who have received the remission of their sins to be divided from those who have not. Just as there are day and night in this world, God commanded us to clearly divide all these people into those



who have received the remission of their sins and those who have not. If we really are Jesus Christ's disciples, in other words, God is commanding us to do this work of God that divides. Do you now understand this?

One more thing that we should realize is that Jesus Christ is the Master of history; the history of this world will be brought to its conclusion by Him. God said, "Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years." No matter how far this world's scientific progress might advance and how the conceited human race might challenge God, this world will clearly be brought to its end by Jesus who created the heavens and the earth. This is the God-spoken Truth.

By whom are the beginning and the end of everything, signs and seasons, days and years, and everything of this world fulfilled? It is by

Jesus Christ that everything begins, unfolds, and ends. When Jesus Christ comes back to this earth as the returning Lord, this world will end.

When the Lord first came to this earth, He blotted all our sins and then ascended to Heaven. But He will come back again in the near future. When He returns, it will mark the end of the first world and the beginning of the second world. Do you understand this? At that time, the Millennial Kingdom will be established. Who rules over the beginning and the end of all history? Who has the authority to rule over all this? Jesus Christ has this authority. That is what the Word of God is clearly saying.

This world may change, but the Word of Jesus Christ is unchanging. No Word that Jesus Christ spoke to us has ever disappeared, but it is all being fulfilled. God is saying, *"Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled"*



(*Matthew 5:18*). Put differently, God fulfills everything with His spoken Word. He accomplishes its every jot and every tittle.

My fellow believers, everyone must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit before he returns back to dust. As we were all made from a handful of dust, so shall we all return to dust. That's because when God made us, He made us with a handful of dust and His Word. The forever-unchanging Truth never disappears. No matter how far science might progress, no matter how carefully we might watch over our diet, and no matter how science might produce new, ground-breaking medicines, when we die, we are still no more than a handful of dust.

We cannot change what God has done, from the beginning to the end. We must believe in the fact that the Lord has saved us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And His witnesses must know what they are supposed to do on this

earth, and they must fulfill this task by faith.  
Amen! ☒



## God Makes Us into Worthy Vessels

<Genesis 1:16-19>

**“Then God made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He made the stars also. God set them in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth, and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness. And God saw that it was good. So the evening and the morning were the fourth day.”**

God created the stars and placed them in the heavens to give light to this earth. Today, I would like to speak to you about the role of the

God-made stars. That God made the stars means that God made His workers on this earth.

In the Old Testament, the people of Israel brought gold and offered it to God to build the Tabernacle, and some of this gold was hammered into a lampstand, others into golden vessels and spoons. Just as the people of God made the articles used in the Tabernacle with gold, God has given true faith to you and me who now believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and He has refined our hearts, so that we may lack nothing to be used as His servants. As we are now trained with the Word of God, we are being shaped into the people of faith, into God’s workers.

God wants to mold His children into workers worthy of using for His Kingdom. So we see how God permits various circumstances to occur with His people. Through these different



circumstances, God is refining you and me until we are shaped into instruments ideal for His use.

When a sculptor makes a statue, he carves it with a sculpting knife or chips it away with a chisel. Sometime he glues different pieces together, other times he breaks them apart, and through all this process he shapes the mold into the figure that he wants to make. Likewise, God also shapes the saints in this way. In order to mold them into His useful instruments, God trains them through necessary courses. For those who are unable to deny themselves, God enables them to do so by putting them into a situation where they are able to deny themselves, and He renews them more for His use. As God has given us His Word, He is showing us how to follow His Word by faith. God is training us, to be fit for each of us.

Each of us must give up our own carnal thoughts before God and believe in His Word. It

is because we have our own thoughts that we want to preserve our old things, but God wants to transform our carnal thoughts. That is why God allows us to find ourselves in various circumstances and face different situations, thus breaking our flawed thoughts and showing us how to believe and follow the Word of God. God does not want to use your old selves, but He wants to shape you into the vessels of His desire and use your renewed selves.

Put differently, our thoughts are different from God's thoughts. All that there is to our carnal thoughts is about the things that we have experienced so far. We try to approach God with our own carnal thoughts. You try to protect yourselves instinctively, rather than approaching God with your true selves to be transformed by faith. However, this is not what God wants from us.



God said, *“Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear.”* God sows seeds on this exposed land, and He wants these seeds to sprout, grow, and really bear the fruits of the Holy Spirit that He desires. God wants all our evil nature to be fully exposed as it is, and He wants us to see our wicked selves, believe in the grace that He has bestowed upon such wicked people, and live the life of righteousness.

Like this, God wants to renew us with His Word. In today’s Scripture passage, that God made the stars means that He wants to make us, the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, into His servants and use us as His instruments. That is why no matter under what circumstances you might find yourselves, you must listen carefully to what God is saying, and obey Him by faith. That’s because God is shaping us into His servants for all

circumstances. The Lord says, *“In all your ways acknowledge Him, And He shall direct your paths”* (Proverbs 3:6).

## God Reveals His Will with His Word

No matter the kind of circumstances to which God might lead us, in the end, it is a process by which God is making us according to His will, turning us into His worthy vessels. Therefore, the wise thing for you and me to do is to obey the Word of God in faith as soon as possible. By nature, you and I tend to dislike it when our flesh is broken and made anew by faith. However, when God demands patience from us and expects us to deny ourselves, we must obey accordingly in faith. To do so, God wants to fill our shortcomings with the Word, break the righteousness of our flesh, and mold us into those





who are able to do His work by faith. To this end, we must quickly confess, “God, this is how wicked and insufficient I am,” and believing in the Word of God who has bestowed His grace on such people, become people of faith. We must stand firmly on our faith in the Word of God.

God continues to shape us ceaselessly until His will is fulfilled. If there are carnal impurities in our hearts, He removes them, and He breaks down our own human righteousness. When God breaks our righteousness, we tend to think, “So my existence is over now.” However, once breaking the righteousness of the flesh, God has given us a faith with power, so that we may live trusting only in the righteousness of God. This is the powerful faith that is based on the Word of God.

It is too difficult for us to try to live our lives of faith with our own righteousness. Once the righteousness of our flesh is broken, however, we

can experience for ourselves that it is by the righteousness of God that we are living. In the end, we are made according to God’s desire and used by Him as His instruments. It’s a blessing for us to become molded before God. God makes it impossible for all of us to live without faith in the righteousness of God: For those who pretend to be noble like glass vessels, God breaks down their nobility, and for those whose own will is stubborn and hard like a rock, God softens them to lose their stubbornness. Also, God drains the water of this world from those who still have many attachments to this world even though they believe in God’s Word.

Sometimes God even sends someone who cannot tolerate heat to Africa as a missionary. We must be able to do God’s work wherever and whenever we might find ourselves, whether in a cold place or a hot place. The Apostle Paul confessed, *“I know how to be abased, and I know*



*how to abound. Everywhere and in all things I have learned both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need” (Philippians 4:12).* From this, we can see how faithfully Paul was trained by God to be His servant.

What we should all remember is that no matter what circumstances we might be facing, we must believe in God’s Word and obey it. If we want to lead a spiritually correct life of faith before God, then we must accept the Word of God into our hearts. If we do not accept God’s Word into our hearts and instead try to live with some type of our own carnal wisdom or righteousness, God will invariably break us apart. God wants our hearts to have nothing of our own, but only His Word to be accepted into them. He wants us to become the kind workers who serve Him with our hearts filled with His Word alone. That is why even today, God is molding us into Himself.

So there is no need for us to fear about the righteousness of our flesh being broken.

Our righteousness of the flesh must be broken before God, so that we may be able to work according to God’s pleasure. We should not insist on our carnal stubbornness before God. Instead, we should believe in God’s Word, fill our hearts with His Truth, and be transformed into trusting workers that preach His gospel all over the earth. To achieve this, we must accept God’s Word into our hearts by faith. Our hearts cannot change unless we accept God’s Word. Spiritual transformation is possible for us only when we accept God’s Word into our hearts, and only when we hold onto this Word of God. Only when we become people of faith can God use us freely and entrust us with His work.

While leading my life of faith to this day, and following the Lord all this time, I, too, have been amazed many times to see what God has done to



me. I am fully aware of just how well God knows me, and how fittingly He has trained me. God knows all about my heart, and it is with this full understanding that He leads me. I have also had many experiences where God rebuked me and pointed out my failures whenever my heart was misplaced.

My fellow believers, God is molding you into His servants. When God wants to make you His people and servants, can there be any objections? Can you really hold a grudge against Him for this? Of course not! Among our students at the mission school, there are some married couples as well. Even though a married couple is of one heart and one body, God molds the husband and the wife separately.

You need to realize that you came here to the mission school to be made new by God. As a matter of fact, God's workers labor hard for His work. We work all the time, day and night. We

also think about tomorrow's work, and we have the overall purpose of serving the will of God in our minds when we plan and work in detail. So given this, just how many workers are needed? We came here to be made into the vessels that are used according to the will of the Lord. That is why we desire to be used for God's work, and for the building of His Kingdom.

While you are being made into His servants, you must first believe in and hold onto the Word believing that your old selves have died. For God to make us His workers, we must have faith in His Word above all. We should hold onto the Word of God, place our faith in it, and yearn to be made into the kind of workers that are ideal for God's use. Only when we willingly submit ourselves to be made into the people of faith by God can both our Lord and we be content. As our Lord shapes us for His use, we should be molded smoothly, or otherwise it will take more time,



and the Lord will not be too pleased. Since we are to be molded according to the will of the Lord anyway, we need to obey.

When a craftsman seeks to hammer a nugget of gold into a spoon, if the nugget cries out, “Ouch! It hurts!” and flies off whenever it is hammered, then the craftsman will obviously not be pleased. If the nugget refused to be molded and flies off every time the craftsman hammers it with a certain shape in mind, then he has no choice but to pound it even more until it is all beat up. This gold should be molded by the craftsman; how can it fly off just because it hurts? If the lump of gold is not fit for its master’s use, then its life is over.

So, when our Master shapes us, even if there is pain, we should endure it and follow the Lord, contemplating on His will even more deeply. When we reflect before the Lord, “Why am I now suffering like this, so troubled and

agonized?” we can realize what it means to be trained by the Lord, and so we can endure all our difficulties. The brothers and sisters who are now being trained in the mission school are different from the ordinary lay believers.

Church leaders are apt to approve laymen at the slightest achievement. But it’s because these laymen are not God’s workers yet that they are praised for even small things they have done. However, you, who are now being trained as God’s workers, should not even expect to be commended. Is there anything good, were it not for us to be made into God’s workers? No, there is nothing good. The saints are mere saints on this earth, not the stars in the sky. The stars shine from above day and night.

Just as God made the stars in the sky, now we know that we must be made anew by God to become His workers. Now, you and I are being made into the stars in the sky. God teaches those



who have no faith in His Word to have this faith. So God turns the lowly into the noble, and the noble into the lowly. That is what our God does. That's because the noble and the lowly are both too difficult to be used if they remain as they are. That is why God molds them according to how He intends to use them. Since it's hard for the lowly to preach the gospel to the noble as they are, they must be turned into the noble, and since the noble are too lofty for God to use them freely, He makes them preach the gospel by turning them into the lowly.

With His Word of power, God is molding both you and me alike. We may not be aware of all this, but God is shaping us all. However, if you look back and see how much you have changed since receiving the remission of your sins, you will acknowledge that God has indeed changed us in many ways.

God is constantly shaping us into His workers. Are you unhappy with this, complaining to God, "I can't understand why God is making me like this against my wish. He just doesn't know me at all"? But such thoughts are all your own carnal thoughts.

God is not someone who does not know us. On the contrary, He is the omniscient God; He knows everything about us. The Bible says that He is even counting the hairs on our heads (Matthew 10:30). Such an omniscient God is refining us to mold us into His workers.

Are you now facing difficult circumstances and suffering? If so, then believe that this is all part of the process by which God is making you into His workers according to His will. It is because the Lord will ultimately turn you into His servants in the end that He is now refining you continuously. The vessels that are promptly made by the Lord will be used precious as God



trains us in various aspects. He teaches us to cope with poverty, and He teaches us to deal with wealth as well. If we do not know how to deal with wealth, our faith will be finished as soon as we become rich, and so we must know how to cope with affluence also. We must become the kind of people who do not go out into the world even when we attain material prosperity blessings from the Lord's work. In contrast, those who do not relent from their stubbornness soon but insist on their obstinacy will be long suffering.

Everyone thinks that he is the only one having so much hardship while serving the Lord, but in fact, everyone else is also facing difficulties. You and I alike go through difficult trials while doing God's work. At a quick glance, we may think that some people are just lucky to serve the Lord in so much comfort, but when we look more closely, they all are struggling in their own way.

Our ministers keep themselves quiet, but when we look at them in this light, we can see that they are also struggling with certain issues and going through a great deal of suffering. Through all these things, God is molding these servants for a certain end.

You are now being trained in the mission school, but those of you who have too much of your own things are difficult to be made into God's workers. While attending this mission school, you must wholeheartedly believe in the Word of God preached by His servants and accept it into your hearts, and only then can you bear all your hardships and be trained properly. That we can bear all things and do God's work is all because of our faith in the Word.

We should not try to do God's work without first accepting His Word into our hearts, through the strength or power of our own flesh, or with the knowledge or experiences that we had before



we were born again. If we try to follow God with our own carnal thoughts or strength, then we will never be able to follow Him until the end. It is only when we follow the Lord always with the grace of God that we can do His Work until the end.

Sometimes, God's servants deliberately make it hard for you on certain issues. Long ago, I once asked my congregation to build walls and put in a heating system for a chapel that was about 230m<sup>2</sup> (2,500 square feet) in size. I knew very well that the brothers at my church were no experts at this, but I still called them all and asked them to work. When I asked them to buy cement in the wee hours, they wondered where they could buy it this late into the night. I then told them to do whatever was necessary to get it, even if they had to pound on the door of a hardware store.

As I looked at these saints' hearts, I could see that they had just labored continuously without folding away their carnal minds. I needed to break down their minds. Once I even told the saints to take out the heating system that they had put it, and replace it with a new one. So after Sunday's worship service was over, I gathered them all together and told them to take apart the chapel floor again. In the afternoon, after the morning worship service was over, another round of construction began. Some of them came to me to voice their objection, saying, "Why do you want to take it out? It's all finished nicely. You should have told us what you wanted to do from the beginning. How can you do this, after we put so much effort into it?"

Regardless of how high or low one's position might be in the world, before God, his thoughts must be broken for him to be used as a worker. As I trained the congregation for a year like this,



from then on, they all obeyed me the moment I spoke. They were all properly trained. From then on, no matter what I asked them to do, they obeyed without any grumbling. After this, on my part, I also became more reasonable in my requests.

Our ministers get together to play soccer once in a while. As a player dribbles the ball, sometimes it would go out of bounds ever so slightly. The opposing team would insist that the ball is out of play, but the other team would insist that it's not. It all gets quite noisy and the game would be stopped for a while. Like this, if one does not break his heart and does not deny himself, then God cannot entrust His work to him. If there is "self" before God, then we cannot do His work.

Do the saints in our church have "self" in them? No. God trains all laymen and workers alike. As God leads them, if any of them disobey

His will, then God will train him more. God shapes us like this, by making us go through various experiences in church. When we fulfill what has been entrusted to us by faith, God will entrust us with an even greater task.

God does not want to assign just one task of His work to one person. When we do God's work well by faith, He entrusts us with more work. If I am unable to fulfill what has been entrusted to me, then God assigns it someone else and redirects me toward some other task. None of us can please the Lord with the strength and power of our own flesh. It is only by the spiritual power given by God, and by the power of our faith in His Word, that we can serve Him. This is the faith of Truth.

In general, when a married couple is going through a spiritually tough time, the wife would nag at her husband, and the husband would be annoyed by his wife. The husband would blame





his wife for his troubles, and the wife would blame her husband for her troubles. This is how most couples tend to think. So the wife thinks, “I’m sure it’s all because of my husband that I’m having so much trouble, and no one respects me,” and the husband, in turn, thinks, “This is what I am all because of my wife.” Clearly, most people think like this at the beginning.

However, once time goes by, they come to realize that whatever situation they might be facing, it’s not because of their husband or wife, but all because of themselves. But, at the beginning, people invariably snap at their partner who is closest to them. Are you not like this also? Instead of blaming your partner and complaining, “I have to go through this hardship all because of you,” I admonish you to believe that all these things are actually part of the process by which God is molding us.

Having shaped us into His workers, God uses us as the right instruments in the right place. When you are faithful to a certain role, God will use you for another role; in this way, God wants you to be able to do all things. God wants you to reign over the whole Garden of Eden. How would you feel if you were sent to a place that you did not want to go? “Why did God send me here? Why must I be here, when someone who is even less talented than me is over there?” Wouldn’t you conclude like this in your own way, and think that God is not fair?

But God always works in a fitting way. You were sent to where you are now because this is what you need. Just because it doesn’t quite fit in with your own thoughts or fails to meet your own expectations, this does not mean that the circumstances and conditions are bad. I admonish you all to realize that God permitted such circumstances in order to use you as His



workers. We can see how God trains laymen like this.

God makes the stars. God makes His servants into the people of faith. It is for this purpose that God made the stars in the sky. Those who have no faith in material affairs, God encourages them get their financial problems solved by placing their faith in Him. Also, those who have no faith in planting a church or preaching the gospel to souls, God has them fulfill this task by faith, by relying on Him and trusting Him. Everyone else is all alike in this. God trains us so that we would pray in faith for all problems and get them solved. God molds us into His people of faith, into His useful instruments, and into His blessed servants. We cannot train ourselves to be God's servants on our own. It is God who shapes us. Even at this very moment, He is molding all of us. And He is using us as His instruments. God is turning you into His workers.

I believe that God is molding our ministers, as well as our brothers and sisters, into His workers. When we are too weak, He opens a way for us to find some rest, and when we are too strong, He breaks us. God works like this in His power. We may not have realized it all the time, but we now know that we have been made by God. Once we go through this process, we come to realize that God has shaped us. And we can also appreciate just how much easier it is now to work, once we are shaped by God. If we have little faith in God, He addresses our faithlessness and shows us how to have faith.

Only when we are trained properly during our stay at the mission school can we adapt ourselves to continue to serve the Lord into the future. If there are ministers who have not been trained in faith, God will train them again. That's because I, too, used to be like this at one time, and even at this moment, I am still being trained



continuously. If hardships still come your way, I admonish you to believe that it's because you need such training that these things are permitted. Even though it's hard to do God's work, all of us must go through this process. We may be struggling, but we must still accept the Word of God and fulfill our task by faith. That is why we are now being trained at the mission school.

We, too, had a very tough time when we first opened this mission school in 1991. We even had to pray for daily bread. When the church had some offerings, we could eat on that day, and when there was no offering, we could not eat. Since it was such a tough time, when someone in the congregation invited us to dinner, I along with the trainees ate so much on that day. We ate as much as we could, since if we did not fill ourselves now, we would regret it tomorrow when hunger returns. But now, we've become

disciplined even in our eating habits so that we don't succumb to gluttony.

When we plant a new church of God, it's the best time to be trained spiritually. Faith is most needed when we try to implement faithfully what God's Church has entrusted to us. You all know how financially challenged a new church can be, right? To put up even a window in the nursery requires financial means, and so all that we can do is pray to God for help. So we put in the window piece by piece, when we had just enough money to pay for it. Words cannot express all the difficulties that we have faced while serving the Lord.

When I was ministering at my church in the beginning, I faced tremendous hardships. However, through such difficulties, God made me into His worker. He showed me how to serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and do the



work of this gospel. Who knew that we would come to do God's work like this?

Every since I began to minister as a servant of the Lord, I have preached this gospel of the water and the Spirit. However, the ministers who were working with me at the time had a different faith from mine. Hearing what I said when I preached the gospel to souls, they used to say, "Huh? He's different from me, isn't he?" Countless pastors in this world do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit and do not believe in it. Their ministry, in other words, has nothing to do with God's gospel of the water and the Spirit.

However, I was completely absorbed to gather together souls and preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When I had an argument with my wife and got into a bad mood, I picked up my Bible briefcase and went out to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

It's impossible for a married couple to never get into a quarrel. It's only natural for them to squabble when times are rough. This was the same for me as well. When I quarreled with my wife, I used to go to a hospital, and preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to the patients. Whenever a soul received the remission of his sins after listening to the gospel of the water and the Spirit, I got so elated. So after preaching the gospel, I would come back home filled with the Spirit. And I talked to my wife about what had happened. As I shared God's blessings with my wife like this, we both felt gratified, and so we forgot all about our fight and were reconciled in no time. We then prayed together for the soul.

It's not that I don't realize how tough it is to serve the gospel. Rather, it's because this gospel is so precious, and because it is the work of life that saves souls, that I am doing this work, having accepted the Word of God in obedience.



Even though it's hard and difficult, we labor in joy, all the while admitting our own insufficiencies. Even if it is very hard, it's because we believe that the Lord's work is so very precious that we are still doing it.

The servants of God may look cold-hearted in human eyes. People who knew me before often say that I've changed because I used to be very compassionate. I couldn't turn my attention from the poor and needy, and tried to take care of them as much as I could. I used to live like this before, trying to take care of everyone else. But now, I can't do this anymore. Why? Because I've come to know that to save people's souls is far more precious than to help them in material matters. Because this work that saves any soul is so precious, I am willing to do anything if it would be beneficial to preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Our God has called us as His workers. I thank Him for calling us as His laborers. As we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, sometimes we struggle with hardships and difficulties, but it is still a blessing for us to live as God's workers.

If you are struggling while following the Lord, I admonish you to accept the Word of God even more. In times of struggle, it is this God-given Word that enables us to overcome our hardships. When we accept God's Word into our hearts, faith will spring forth. God will enable us to overcome our difficulties. For us, the Word of God is our life. We will live when we have the Word of God, but we will die without it.

Hallelujah! God has become our strength and our Shepherd. God has shaped us into His workers. ☒



## The Righteous Shall Live by Faith Alone

<Genesis 1:20-23>

**“Then God said, ‘Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens.’ So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, ‘Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.’ So the evening and the morning were the fifth day.”**

Through the work of creation that God did on the fifth day, He is telling us about how the righteous are to live by their faith in God and in His Word.

Why did God say, “Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth”? Is this just about fish and birds? As we ponder upon this passage, we need to first keep in mind for whom the Bible was given. We can then realize that this passage was spoken to those who have received the remission of sin to live by faith.

In today’s Scripture passage, God had birds fly in the sky; by this, God meant, “The righteous shall live only by faith.” We the righteous should then examine ourselves to see whether or not we are indeed living by faith.

God says, *“The just shall live by faith”* (Romans 1:17). What is faith? Is it faith for us to just say, “I believe”? There is always hardship in



our lives. However, no matter how many difficulties we might face, unless we the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit hold onto the Word of God with our hearts and live by faith, even our elementary faith that allowed us to receive the remission of our sins will perish away, and we will end up departing from God's Church. I've seen this happen quite often. On the other hand, if we know what it is to live by faith in the Word of God, and if we apply God's Word to our actual lives by faith, it will help us immensely, and we will be blessed. The righteous must live by their faith in the righteousness of God. And they must live by their faith in God and in His Word.

You and I are leading our lives of faith trusting in the Lord, but we need to realize what kind of faith is the right faith. Why it is imperative that we should live by faith?

Most of you, even after receiving the remission of your sins, have not really lived by placing all your faith in God. You all have lived by the strength of your own flesh, and you can't claim to have lived by believing in God. Before we were born again, we had lived trusting either in money or power, or otherwise in the strength of our own flesh.

However, once we were born again, God told us we should live by trusting in Him, and we should follow Him believing in His Word. Since it is only right for all of us to live by placing our faith in God and His righteousness, this is how we ought to live. And since this is written in the Bible, we think that this is right. Yet, while the Word is right, at the same time we've come to recognize how hard it is to live like this. However, when we actually encounter trouble, we see ourselves unable to do so.



For instance, let's turn to the problem of our basic needs for clothing, food, and housing. Before we were born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we had invested the bulk of 24 hours in a day to make money. Once we were born again, however, we came to the gathering of God's Church and heard the Word, telling us that we should live by faith, serve the gospel, give offerings, live for the Lord, and unite with the Church as well. All these are right. God is now demanding from us a life that is completely different the old one.

Before, we used to live through our own strength, like an ostrich, but now that we are told to live by faith, we find it frustrating because we have little faith. An ostrich is capable of running at 80 km. an hour on its two legs, stirring up quite a dust. Without any assistance from its wings, it is more than able to escape from its predators and find its food just on its two legs.

This is how we had lived before, but now, it is no longer possible to live like this relying only our strength. Before, we had the strength of the flesh, but once we came into God's Church by faith, we realized that our strength of the flesh was completely insufficient. In other words, none of us can live by the strength of our flesh alone. Why? Because we cannot meet all the requests of God with our ability and strength alone. That is why we must live by placing our faith in the righteousness of God and His Word, and because of this, we must change our old way of life.

The Bible says, "The Just Shall Live by Faith Alone." There is only way for the righteous to live, and it is to live by their faith in the righteousness of God and His Word. That is why we must cast aside our carnal thoughts. Now, then, let us ponder on how we should live by faith.





In today's Scripture passage, God said, "Let birds fly in the firmament," and this passage implies that the righteous can indeed live by faith. This is what it means when it is said that the righteous are to live by trusting in God: They pray to the Lord and ask Him for their needs, and they also believe that whatever they ask from the Lord, the Lord would answer them. We can live by faith when we believe that the Lord is our Shepherd, that He is our God, that He is our Savior, and that He is our Master. In other words, this means that all of us should live by the belief that the Lord would work in our lives as we pray to Him. Placing our faith in God is to pray to the living Lord for help whenever we encounter any difficulty in our lives and to get our prayers answered by Him.

If we are struggling, then we should pray to God and ask for His help. And we should have the belief that the Lord would answer our request

for help. This faith, that the Lord would give us wisdom and grace, solve our problems, and respond to our prayers in various forms when we pray, is imperative. That is how we can live by relying on the righteousness of the Lord, and, to be more specific, be helped by Him by praying to Him. This is what it means to live by faith in the Lord.

We do not believe in God as if we were believing in some founders of the religions of the world, but we bow down before the Lord who lives now and forever, and who has saved you and me from our sins, and we pray to Him asking for His help. It is then that we meet God in these prayers and are blessed by Him in our lives. When we pray to the Lord, we can have communion with the Lord through our faith, and we can live by faith. We should let Him know our struggles, ask for His help, remember His Word, and believe that the Lord will help us and



solve our problems without fail. It is by this faith that we should live. This must be done in our actual lives of faith. Those who live by their faith in the righteousness of God pray to the Lord and have fellowship with Him, and therefore they can live by the power and grace that He bestows on them. This is how they live, having fellowship with the Lord and being answered through their faith, relying on Him and trusting in Him. None other than this is to live by trusting in God.

Countless people in this world claim to live by trusting in God, but that is not actually true. Whenever God's servants encountered trials, they first asked the Lord for help through their prayers. Didn't the Apostle Paul pray to the Lord all the time? The Apostle Paul's faith included the belief that God would infallibly fulfill what He promised. So to us also, he admonished, *"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit"* (Ephesians 6:18).

If we ask the Lord for help whenever we are struggling, each time the Lord will answer our prayers in various forms. We must live by faith, believing that God would uphold us and help us when we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to this world.

To this day, we have lived by believing in God and His righteousness. The Apostle Paul, too, lived by his faith in God and His righteousness. The people of faith appearing in the Bible all lived by this faith in God. The predecessors of faith who are now leading you have also lived by faith until now.

Your predecessors of faith were not free from hardship, but they, too, have continuously faced trials from the very moment they believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. They had to stand up and fight against the enemy, they were snubbed, they were persecuted, they were



subjected to all kinds of insult, and they lost every material possession that they had.

I myself have also lost much from believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but I have gained even more. After I met the Lord, I was persecuted severely, from outside and even from my own family. I had no material possessions. Was I healthy then? No, I wasn't even healthy. I was constantly ill. Sometimes my vertebrae were inflamed, and my thickened blood used to make my body rigid. I was near death on many occasions. When we tried to live by placing our faith in the Lord, we encountered countless obstacles, but each time, we prayed to the Lord and our prayers were answered, and this is how we have lived to this day. That is why the righteous should live only by faith.

On the fifth day, God said, "Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly across the firmament."

How can we fly across the firmament of faith? Once we are born again, how can we live the life of the righteous? When we are living on this earth with our flesh still intact, how can we live our lives as the righteous? This is made possible only when we live by our faith in the righteousness of the Lord. And the righteous must live believing in all the Word of God, as they ought to given who they are.

How could we have carried on with our lives when all of us had faced so many trials, and when we had even faced physical death? It's been possible precisely because we have lived by believing in the Lord's righteousness alone. Praying to the Lord constantly, we have lived by our faith, believing that the Lord would answer our prayers, and that He has become our Shepherd, our Father, and our Savior. This is true faith.



Our lives have faced trouble at every turn and twist. Even now, we are not free from hardship. However, we know that we will continue to live by placing our faith in the Lord's righteousness, even if we were to face far greater difficulties. We are such that unless we live by trusting in the Lord's righteousness, we have no choice but to die in both body and spirit.

The people of faith who preceded us, from John the Baptist to Peter, John, Paul, Mark, and Matthew, all lived by faith. They lived by faith, relying on the Almighty God. They did not live relying on their own strength of the flesh or their material possessions. We, too, have lived by trusting in the Lord's power to this day. In the Bible, on the fourth day of creation God spoke about how He made His servants, and on the fifth day, He spoke about how these servants should live by placing their faith in the Lord.

When you are facing hardship, how should you resolve it? Should you try to resolve it through man-made means? Even this requires certain conditions, and money; so what can you really do when you have nothing?

You must live only by trusting in God, relying on His righteousness, asking for His help and believing in Him. We must learn to live this life that relies on God, trusts in His righteousness, and seeks His help. Even in small matters, we should ask for God's help, saying, "God, please help me in this." We must ask the Lord in faith, and live by the belief that He would give us what we ask from Him. We should bring our problems to the Lord and ask Him, "God, please solve this problem and help me. I ask You to resolve it. I ask You to help me. I believe that You will answer me." We can live by asking the Lord for His help and trusting in Him.



If we ask the Lord by faith, and if our prayer is fitting, the Lord will answer us. God will work in our lives and in our circumstances with His power. So it is through the Lord's help that we live. You must now learn to live by trusting in the Lord. Most people try to live within the bounds of their faculty and material possessions. However, the born-again righteous, whether laymen or ministers, can overcome all trials if they rely entirely on the Lord and live by faith. No matter what the problem may be, when they bring it to the Lord, believe in Him, and ask Him to help, He will surely answer. None other than this is faith. You should now learn to live by faith, and you must indeed live by faith.

## **God Has Refined My Faith**

There was a time when I faced extreme hardship and yet lived by trusting in the Lord. At that time, at my side there were neither the ministers who are now working with me, nor brothers and sisters of faith, as well as far less material possessions. At the time when I went to a port city called Sokcho, the only thing I believed was that God was my God, that I was His servant, and that God would therefore hear me when I prayed. This was the faith by which I lived.

Trusting in God, I prayed to Him. In my eyes of the flesh, it looked hopelessly bleak, but I had faith, believing, "Without the gospel of the water and the Spirit, this city is a wilderness, but God will surely make me preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit here, and through this He will save many people from sin and raise His



Church.” I knew what God’s will sought to accomplish through me. But I had nothing. I knew no one, and I lacked everything.

First of all, I had to find a place to call home for my family of three which included my wife, my son, and myself. I looked for a rental place, and I came across a listing for a rundown unit with one bedroom and a small kitchen, located in a poor neighborhood. The rent was about \$30 a month. But I didn’t even have this money. And I did not have any security deposit.

So I prayed to God. As God helped me in this matter, I was able to rent the place and live there. Once we moved in, we now needed furniture and household items. It was a very grim situation for the head of a family to face. In my desperation, I began to walk around the city and prayed to God to find me a job. “God, am I not Your servant? I believe I am. You have saved me from my sins through the Truth of the gospel of the water and

the Spirit, and I have served you to this day, but I am now facing a very difficult situation.”

First, I affirmed by faith whether or not I was a servant of God. Once I was convinced in my heart that I was indeed God’s servant, I asked God boldly, “God, if I am Your servant, then You must help me. If I am not Your servant, You can just leave me alone. But I am Your servant. Now I want to do Your work, but I need to first meet the basic needs of my family. What should I do, Lord?”

There was nothing that I could do with my body. I hung around the market for manual labor, but I couldn’t do it. Just a day’s work would have cost me more on medication than the wages that I would have earned. To find a job, one has to have some sort of skill or ability that is in demand in a given society, but I had no such skills.

Because I had lived in a prayer retreat center all this time, I had had no need to worry about



the basic needs of clothing, food, and housing, and because I had no job experience to speak of, there was nothing that I could do once I was left alone in this world. So I began to pray. “God, what should I do? Please uphold me, Lord, and help me find the means to sustain my wife and my son. It’s a very serious problem. I am Your servant, and yet what is this that is happening to me? It’s not because I don’t want to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit that I am struggling like this. Far from it, I have fallen into a great trial. God, I want to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Please help me.” I had to pray like this.

Walking in the streets of the city aimlessly, I prayed and I thought hard, “What can I actually do to earn a living?” At the very moment, a barbershop came to my mind. Long ago, when I was still attending elementary school, my brother-in-law used to run a barbershop. So after

I came back from school, I used to do chores at my brother-in-law’s barbershop, wash the customer’s hair, and made some pocket money from this. But it’s not as if I was skilled enough to actually give a hair-cut. So, essentially, I had no skill whatsoever. Even so, I decided to find a job at a barbershop.

Across from a wedding hall in that city, there was a tiny barbershop. Now, I had nothing but only my faith in God. There was no other means or course of action to take. When I entered into the store, I saw that the owner was working all by himself.

So I asked him, “Would you hire some help?” When he told me that he would, I told him that I would like to work for him. The owner asked me how long I have been working at this job, and I let it slip off my tongue, saying, “I’ve been working for 20 years.” I said this by faith.

He then asked, “Where are you from?”



I said, “I am from Busan.” Busan is the second largest city in Korea.

He then asked again, “Where in Busan did you work?” and so I answered, “I used to work in the downtown.” I was from Busan anyways, and so I said that I used to work in the most thriving part of the city for 20 years. Hearing this, the owner asked me to start working beginning the next day.

So, the next morning, I went to the barbershop to work. But the owner did not show up early. As I opened the store and cleaned the place, the first customer stepped inside. Holding a pair of scissors for the very first time, my hand was trembling. I could mimic to give some sort of a haircut, since I had seen my brother-in-law cutting the customers’ hair long ago, but my hand kept shaking since I actually did not have any real skill. If I gave up there, I would have been fired, and so I began cutting the hair, all the

while praying in my heart. “Lord, give me the strength.”

The scissors seemed to have its own mind, trying to cut the customer’s ear instead of his hair. But, even as I was trembling, I made it through and finished cutting the customer’s hair. I also shaved him, but by then I was trembling even more. I could not but pray desperately because it would be all over if I were fired. “Lord, I don’t even have the strength to pray anymore. Please keep me, Lord, and please help me to do what I am now doing.”

Placing my faith in the Lord, I gave the customer a shave. His face bled all over. I put a piece of facial tissue on his bleeding spots time after time, and yet the customer remained still and said nothing. The owner also pretended not to see this, and didn’t say anything. The customer asked how much he owed, and I received his payment. With that level of skill, it





was clear that I could not continue to do this work.

But I had a firm resolve within myself, thinking, “All that I can do now is to believe in God. This is the only thing that I can do, and now it’s a do-or-die situation.” And I prayed again, “Lord, please don’t let me get fired from this place.” However, a couple of hours later, the customer came back from his home and wanted to get a new hair-cut, saying that his wife complained of a botched job. So this time the owner himself gave him another haircut. What was strange, however, was that the shop owner didn’t say anything to me, and he let me continue to work at his shop.

The money that I made at that time from working for 8 hours was not that much. But later, I got a small raise. I made about \$50 a day later; of this, \$20 would cover the living cost of my family, and I gave the rest to my wife to be

saved. At that time, I was praying to establish God’s Church and preparing the necessary financial means to do so. Since there was no one to make any donations to me at that time, I tried to save to find a place of worship, so that I could preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Whenever I had time, I looked for someone who would believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Even as I held a job at my workplace, whenever I had some spare time, I went out and put up some handwritten posters that said, “If you would like to hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit, please contact us at this phone number.”

From time to time, people actually called from reading the posters. Once, a man attending a seminary called me and told me that he did not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and so I met him and preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit to him. As a result, he came



to receive the remission of his sins. A number of people actually came to receive the remission of their sins in joy. But there was no place, not even a room, where we could hold our gatherings. People were disappointed to hear that there was no place of worship. Although they heard the gospel, they saw how sad my situation was, preaching the gospel without even a proper place of worship, and so they all left me.

So I prayed, “Lord, please send me coworkers with whom I can serve the gospel.” According to how I prayed to God, I was able to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to a certain mission organization, and once its members heard the gospel, they cast aside their old, mistaken faith, and they were able to found God’s Church with me.

At that time, as I began to minister at God’s Church that preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit, I opened a mission school to nurture

God’s workers to spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit throughout the whole world. Some married women came to class to hear the lecture, and about ten young brothers and sisters registered at the mission school as the first term students. This is how I was able to start the mission school.

“God, I will preach the gospel to the world. And I will plant Your Church in each region in Korea. Please help me, Lord. I believe that You will make me raise Your Church, and I believe that You will allow me to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit.” I believed in the Lord, and I prayed with this faith. And I prayed for my insufficiencies. I did everything by trusting in God. That I did everything by faith means that whenever I faced hardship, I bowed down before the Lord and prayed earnestly for His help time after time, and whatever I did, I did trusting that the Lord would indeed help me without fail.



And just as I believed, God allowed me to achieve all these things.

I nurtured God's workers also by this faith in the Lord. Although my brothers and sisters of faith had received the remission of their sins, in their hearts there still remained many things of the world. Their hearts, in other words, could easily revert back to carnal minds at any time. Because such hearts could not be transformed just by teaching with my own words, I had to remove the wickedness of their hearts with my faith in the Lord. And I had to lead them to the Lord.

Whenever I testified the Word of God, I also bore witness by faith. Because they had so many questions about the Word of God and myself, I had to teach them many aspects regarding the Word by faith. When I testified to them with the Word of God, their hearts' unbelief was removed one by one. So through the mission school, I

yielded the Lord's workers and raised them as preachers. God's Church, too, was built in this way.

Faith in the Lord is to believe as the following: "God is my God, the Lord is my Savior who has blotted out all my sins once for all, and He is my Shepherd who helps me. If I live according to the will of the Lord and follow Him by faith, then no matter what circumstances I might face, even if I am near death, the Lord will help me for sure, for He is my Shepherd and my Savior. I believe that the Lord will give me whatever I ask from Him, and it is precisely by this faith that I became a servant of God. Even now, it is by this faith in the Lord that I am working." Sometimes, even my coworkers find it hard to understand my actions, but it is actually by my faith in the Lord that I am doing the Lord's work.



I live by faith even under difficult circumstances. I work trusting in God. The Lord saves me and raises me up when I believe in Him. If you are facing any trials, you, too, should ask the Lord to solve them. If you ask and really believe that the Lord will answer you, then He will indeed answer your prayer. When you serve the Lord in this way, you will be able to solve all the problems that you are facing one by one. It is by your faith in the Lord that you can overcome countless difficulties.

Are there trials and tribulations before your eyes? Of course there are; no one is trouble-free. How, then, should you solve them? You should resolve them by placing your faith in the Lord. You must resolve them by faith, by praying to the Lord and getting His help. That is precisely what faith is all about. I believe that if you pray about your trials, trust in God, rely on Him, and live by faith, and then God will resolve all your

difficulties. This is the real faith. It is not a hypothetical notion.

A certain leader at a mission group constantly claims to be living just by faith. He claims, “In my wallet all that I have is only \$10 for emergency. Even though I am only paid \$300 a month to cover the living expenses of my family, because I pray by faith, I am provided for by God, and so I lack nothing to make ends meet.” But he is actually deceiving his congregation. As far as I know, he actually has several credit cards. And whatever expenses he puts on the cards, they are all covered by his mission organization’s finances. So when this pastor claims to spend only \$300 for his living expenses, he is only raising his own righteousness before God.

In contrast, my living expenses are well over \$1,000 a month. How can anyone get by on just \$300 a month? To host some guests for 2-3 days



at my home would alone cost more than \$300. Is it faith not to spend money? If it is for the Lord, and if it is necessary, then I spend all the money that has to be spent. But I pray when I have no money. It may even require millions of dollars, but if it's for the Lord, then millions of dollars are spent.

To live before the Lord is to live by placing faith in Him. Whoever is righteous must live by faith. It is all because of the lack of faith that the righteous stumble, and it is because of the lack of faith that their lives are miserable. But if they live by faith, then they can overcome all their weaknesses, and they can accomplish everything. For us to make money also must be done by trusting in the Lord. It is through serving the Lord that we receive monies. There is no shame here, since it's not for ourselves that we are receiving monies, but it's for the Lord. That's

why we sometimes ask the Lord for even more money.

As the Lord approached Jerusalem, where He was to be eventually crucified, He reached Bethphage on the Mount of Olives, and He sent out two disciples, saying, *“Go into the village opposite you, and immediately you will find a donkey tied, and a colt with her. Loose them and bring them to Me” (Matthew 21:2).*

What would the owner say, if some stranger took away his colt? Wouldn't he say, “Why are you taking away my colt?” and take him to be a thief? The Lord, however, told the disciples that if the owner asked them this, they should answer, “The Lord has need of them.” So the disciples had no problem bringing the colt. Exactly as prophesied in the Word, the Lord entered Jerusalem on a colt (Zechariah 9:9).

We must have faith, that whatever is the will of the Lord should all be fulfilled without fail.



For us to work and earn our living properly before the Lord, and to rise to the challenge of spreading the gospel of God—to live like this is to live by faith. As it is written, “*The just shall live by faith*” (*Romans 1:17*). It is by faith that we live.

There is so much disbelief about the Lord in your thoughts. Satan tries to sow disbelief in us and prevent us from living by faith. In times like this, we must defeat the Devil by faith, saying, “In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ I command you, get behind me Satan!”

A while back, I traveled to a certain city to plant a new church. I went there with several fellow ministers to look for a place of worship. While staying at a motel over night, suddenly I came down with an excruciating pain in my stomach. So I wondered, “Lord, I didn’t have anything bad for dinner, so why is my stomach hurting so much?” At that time, I thought that

Satan was trying to undermine my will, because I was supposed to sign the lease with the landlord the next day, and it was a crucial first step toward preaching the gospel to that region.

The Devil cannot enter us, but he can still pressure us from the outside. So, I shouted out in my mind, “Devil! I command you in the name of Jesus Christ, get behind me Satan!” Like this, I commanded Satan to go away, and I prayed to God. The pain in my stomach was so overwhelming that it even spread to my head, but if I were to call an ambulance this late in the night, it would have caused so much trouble for us, as we had to sign the lease with the landlord the next morning. So I prayed to God all night long. And I defeated Satan by faith. As the sunrise approached, all my pain was gone. I woke up in the morning, had breakfast, met the landlord, and signed the lease.



As a result of following the gospel of the water and the Spirit, I even became estranged from my own parents and brothers. Not only this, but while serving the Lord, I even lost my own son. At that time, I was attending a church gathering elsewhere, and I had entrusted my small children to a fellow co-worker to baby-sit. He forgot to close all the windows, and my second son fell through an open window to his death from the fourth floor. Every window in every church that belongs to our mission now has a safety mesh. I had it installed because of this painful memory, and also because safety must always be put first. I didn't blame the coworker who was baby-sitting my children. I gave the police a written notice saying, "I will neither raise any objection nor seek any responsibility from anyone for this accident," and I dispensed all of any consequences right then and there. My

wife and I scattered the cremated remains of our son over a river.

Before my son's death, I had constantly held him in my arms and taught the gospel to him, as I didn't know when the Lord might take him away. I had told him countless times, "My son, you know that I love you, right? God also cherishes you in this way. Your wrongdoings are sins. But Jesus Christ came to this earth, shouldered all these sins and took them all away by being baptized in the Jordan river by John the Baptist, and blotted out these sins by being crucified."

I had told him about the gospel of the water and the Spirit as many times as I could. Some people might wonder how a small child could comprehend all this, but I believe that the child can understand his parent's heart. When the parents teach the gospel to their children with faith, the children will also accept it. I had taught the gospel of the water and the Spirit to my son.



But my son went to God. “Farewell, my son.” I scattered his cremated remains over a river.

That evening, I still preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit. There were those who received the remission of their sins from attending the gathering on that day. I lost my own son, but the Lord gave me another spiritual child that day.

I said to my wife, “If our children were to grow up and prosper, wouldn’t we have placed our hope on them? I think God took away our son first, so that I wouldn’t place my hope on anything on this earth. So my dear, you should take the loss as I do, and let us cry no more. Wouldn’t God have a certain purpose for us in taking away our son? God will relieve us in time. This all happened while I was away to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit; it’s something that happened with God’s permission.” I got back on my feet placing my faith in God.

Since I, too, am only human, if my sons were to prosper in this world, I would also have come to rely on them. However, I have overcome everything by my faith in the Lord. Whatever I did, I did it all by faith. You, too, must solve everything by faith, no matter what trials you might be facing, and no matter what it is that pleases God. Without faith in the Lord, we cannot actually carry on. We cannot do God’s work.

When I met a group of believers, who became the founding members of our mission organization, they invited me for the first time as a speaker at an outdoor retreat, but the timeslot allotted to me was at 11 PM. It was very late, but I didn’t care, and so I preached the Word even at that late hour. As always, I preached by faith at this time also. I could not help but pray to God for His help. Before preaching, I had gone into my tent and prayed to God, “God, if there arises





no soul from this gathering that receives the remission of sin through the gospel of the water and the Spirit in this retreat, then the gospel will fail to be preached to this gathering. So God, this retreat is very important. Whether or not this gathering is used by You depends entirely on this occasion. Souls must be saved.”

At the retreat, the afternoon hours were reserved for group fellowship. Some people went swimming, while others went fishing. This was an official part of the retreat. So, as I preached the gospel late in the hour, the audience was already too tired from the day’s program and many dosed off, making it difficult to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit properly.

The road ahead me was long and there was much that I wanted to talk about, but since I was in no position to preside over the gathering, I couldn’t lead them as I wanted, and so I climbed up the mountain every afternoon by myself.

After praying, I came back to the camp and saw the fish they had caught were put on the dinner menu. All that I could say was, “Thank you for all your effort. Let us eat.”

Anyways, after the retreat was over, I was waiting for my bus to arrive and was having a small chat with some believers. Then I was approached by a few young men. God had prepared the time for me. At that time, I was able to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to them once again: “What is mankind’s sin? It’s like a wave. It keeps coming as the tide moves in. People continue to sin until the day they die. The wave continues to crash down time after time, no matter how they might try to block it. This is the nature of sin. Jesus Christ accepted all these sins by being baptized.”

It was at that time that our brother Wonki Choi, who is now a pastor, accepted the gospel. And several other young brothers and sisters also



received the remission of their sins. That is how the work of the gospel arose.

When I preached to Missionary Yonghwa Lee, who had been the leader of that congregation, I also did so by faith. At that time, I was visiting his home, and after exchanging greetings I sat down on the sofa. He said to me, “Let me ask you just one thing.”

I said, “What is it?”

He said, “Why did God hate Esau while He loved Jacob? I just can’t understand it.” So I told him, “Bring your Bible,” and opening it to chapter 9 of the Book of Romans, I began to speak.

“It says here, ‘The purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works but of Him who calls.’ Whom did God call? He called people like Jacob. He calls those who are inferior, cowardly, and contemptible, those who, though they believe in God, have nothing of their

own to boast. It is these whom God calls and saves. God loved Jacob but hated Esau because people like Esau are too strong for their own good, as they stand against God instead of relying on Him.”

Missionary Lee then said to me, “I’ve studied a lot and learned a lot all this time, but you are the first to address this issue so clearly. What books have you read?”

As I took a look around his study, I saw that he had many books, but I said to him, “You should take all these books over to a recycling depot. I mastered them all a decade ago. But there was no truth in them, but only leaven that corrupts the soul. If you are too attached to them to throw them away, then keep them for now, but when you realize how they are useless, throw them away.”

The situation of the Church at that time was such that we had to ordain Missionary Lee as a



pastor. Only then could the church order be established. But could we raise someone who was not born again as God's servant? So I prayed, "God, as I preach this gospel of the water and the Spirit to him, at least he has to believe in this gospel. Only then can I avoid committing sin before You. Only then will Your work be accomplished properly."

Praying to God like this, I preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit by faith. Missionary Lee was not made whole by the gospel on that day, but still, I decided to take some time and wait, and so I proceeded to explain the gospel step by step. Like this, I preached the Word to Missionary Lee directly. He had so many other questions that I had to untangle and explain the Word of God to him in detail by faith. So in the end, Rev. Lee was finally saved, was raised as a servant of God, served the gospel with us by faith, and went to the Lord before us.

It also takes faith for you to trust in your preceding servants and follow them. There is nothing in the lives of the righteous that does not require faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. To obey as directed by the predecessors of faith also takes faith, and to follow them requires faith as well—indeed, everything requires faith. When the predecessors of faith ask you to do something, wouldn't you be unable to obey their words if you have no faith in the God-established order?

We must live by placing our faith in the Word of God and in our Lord. "It is God's will for the gospel to be preached throughout the whole world. We must therefore preach the gospel, and the gospel will indeed be spread without fail" When we thus believe, such acts of faith are bound to come out of us. Even if we just can't understand what the predecessors of faith are asking us to do, if we have faith, then we shall



unite our hearts with them and obey with a “yes”. Faith is what makes it possible for us to do whatever it is that serves the benefit of the gospel, even if it does not fit our standards and bruises our ego.

Christians know very well that they have to preach the gospel to the world, but they can’t quite bring themselves to actually do it. With the usual method of evangelization, all is in vain no matter how hard they might try. If a missionary goes to some country, learns its local culture, builds a church, opens a community service center like a hospital or a school, and manages to draw a number of congregations, then this missionary has achieved a spectacular success. The missionary works of William Carey, who went to India and preached the gospel there, and of Hudson Taylor, who went and preached the gospel to China, remain as groundbreaking

milestones in the history of the Christian mission.

But what about us? We are preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit all over the world through our literature. If Jesus were to take slightly more time to return, we would go down in history as those who fulfilled a landmark ministry in the preaching of the true gospel. Even though people might take us lightly, they will come to realize that we were people of tremendous faith. It is by faith that we are now living. We have served the Lord by faith to this day, and we will continue to do so in the days to come. The Bible says, “*Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*” (Hebrews 11:1).

God’s work can be done only by faith. The Devil is also defeated by faith, our enemies are also vanquished by faith, and everything is done by faith. To live is also done by faith. We must



live by believing in the Lord. We must unite with the Lord by faith, and we must follow Him by faith. You can come to live by faith only when you are powerless. You will not rely on your faith as long as you have your own strength.

Ostriches have huge wings. If they were to fly with these wings, they would be able to fly faster than even an eagle. They are also stronger. Even with a man sitting on their back, they can run like a horse. This is how big and strong ostriches are. They are capable of running at 80 km. (50 miles) an hour. But since their legs are so strong, they don't try to fly at all. That's because they see no need to fly.

However, even an ostrich will use its wings once its legs are cut off. Pursued by a predator like a lion, it will flap its wings trying to escape death and its body will fly. "Wow, I didn't know I had such nice wings." The ostrich can beat the eagle only if it will fly. To make an ostrich fly,

we must cut off its legs. We must cut them off when it's asleep. Then, it will fly in a month, if we feed it and take care of the wounds for a while. A chicken, too, can fly once its legs are cut. Chicks can be made to fly in no time. If their legs are cut off as soon as they are born and heal their wounds, they will fly, since they can no longer walk.

Do you know why you are unable to live by trusting in the Lord? You can't live by faith because your own strength is too strong. It's because you have something else on which to rely. As for me, I have nothing else of which I can rely. I've been driven away from my home, from my friends, and from my former denomination.

If your character is unimpeachable, if you are quick-minded, or if you are strong enough on your own, you are bound to rely on these things. But once you realize that all these things are



nothing, you will come to trust only in the Lord's Word and live by faith. The just shall live by faith alone. It is not when everything is going well for us that we live by faith, but it is when the going gets tough that we live by faith. It is then that we come to pray to God.

You must believe that God allowed your difficult circumstances in order to give you faith, and you must pray to God and follow Him, believing that He shall answer all your prayers. I have nothing to expect from myself. I'm foul-mouthed and short-tempered; I'm not well-educated and I'm not strong; I've got all kinds of health problems; and I'm short and fat. Who would like such a man as myself? What do I have to rely on? There is nothing of which to rely.

Are you still relying on something of your own? You must realize that the things of the flesh are nothing. You must realize that man's

achievements are nothing before God. If we have enough bread right now, we won't pray for our daily bread. But when there is no bread, we will come to pray for it. It is when we realize our insufficiencies that we come to pray to God and ask Him for our needs. It is when we realize how important God's work is that we come to pray. This is faith.

My fellow believers, when you realize how precious it is to serve the Lord, you will all come to live by faith. ☒



## Set Your Hearts before God

<Genesis 1:20-23>

**“Then God said, ‘Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens.’ So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, ‘Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.’ So the evening and the morning were the fifth day.”**

God commanded to let there be birds flying in the firmament of the heavens and fish abounding in the water, and the birds and fish to be fruitful and multiply. This implies that the righteous should live by faith to bear an abundance of spiritual fruits. Accordingly, the righteous should naturally believe in God and His Word, in His Church, and in the fact that God leads them through His Church. They should have faith in the promise that they can triumph in body and spirit when they realize and believe that to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit is God’s will.

Put differently, the righteous must set their hearts on God. We must set our minds before God to live according to His will in obedience, and we must live by placing our faith in God. God commanded the fish to multiply in the water. God told us to set our minds to live by



faith, and the reason why He said this is because it is according to God's will that we should live.

## **We Must Get Our Hearts Approved by God**

In the Old Testament, chapter 11 of the Book of Leviticus specifies the types of birds and fishes that are edible and inedible. Of these, cranes that we commonly see are defined as unclean birds that are inedible. Cranes often stand still in shallow water, waiting for the fish to pass by. They are so still that they look as if they were stuffed. But when fish swim by them, these cranes nab them instantly. The Bible says that such birds are unclean birds. Spiritually speaking, these birds are like Satan's servants.

While the Word of God divides birds and fish into two types, one edible and the other inedible,

we cannot interpret this literally in carnal terms and apply it to our actual lives. We should know very well that it was to teach us certain spiritual truths that God divided birds into clean and unclean ones.

God also divided fish into clean and unclean ones, and of these, He allowed those with scales and fins to be eaten. Those without scales and fins, on the other hand, were forbidden. When it comes to our lives of faith, this implies that we should cast aside faithless lives and live only by trusting in God. We know that if we were to look for fish without scales in the water, we would find such fish as loaches and eels. The fish without scales and fins refer to Christians living faithless lives.

Nowadays many rivers are too polluted to do this, but before, when the rivers were clean, I used to go there often with students at the mission school for a picnic. When we were





ministering at a new church in a small city, when there wasn't that much to eat, we often went out to a river with a net to drag for fish. We went into the river and dragged the net across the riverbed to catch fish, netting such fish as loaches, catfish, and eels. Catfish and eels usually feed on small fish, and so they are mostly concentrated in areas that hold plenty of small baitfish.

God told us to eat fish with scales and forbade us from eating the fish without scales and fins. Fish without scales do not live where there are strong currents. In contrast, fish with scales and fins can swim anywhere, even where they are strong currents. Scaled fish can swim against the current.

As we know, salmons have a homing instinct. They swim up the stream to return to the place of their birth and spawn there, risking their lives and struggling against all kinds of obstacles. It is

only after they are back in the place of their birth that they spawn. That a fish has scales means that it can go and live wherever it wants.

Fish without scales, on the other hand, cannot swim against the current. Such fish have a narrow window of challenge to move to a better place. They don't even want to move around much. They live their entire lifetime in the place of their birth, spawning and dying in the same place.

To draw a spiritual analogy, we the righteous are like the scaled fish. However, for us to live for the Lord, the very first thing that we must do is set our hearts on God. Our faith is this: We believe that the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the only Truth; we have been saved by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit; we are with God's people; we have to live for the gospel from now on; and therefore, God's Church is ours. God's Church is now our home.



When Jacob fell asleep in the field resting his head on a stone pillow, he saw God's angels ascending and descending on a stairway, and he confessed, "This is the house of God." Likewise, we also confess that God's Church is now our home.

Having been saved from our sins, we now have come into God's Church and we are now living in it. However, some of us have not as of yet set their hearts free, while some of us have. Among the born-again Christians, those who have set their minds on God now belong to God, and all of us are precisely such people who believe that we now belong to Jesus Christ and keep this faith.

Such people profess their faith by saying, "We are all God's people. These are all my people. God's people in the Church are my own people. For us to work here in God's Church is to serve

the Lord." As such, our hearts must be set like that.

The righteous, in other words, cannot waver back and forth like the bat in Aesop's fables, claiming to be a mouse during the day and a bird during the night. The bat is welcomed neither by the birds nor by the beasts. So it lives in a dark cave. While all other birds live in harmony, the bat lives alone isolated from the rest.

Those who have not set their hearts on God are not only abhorred by God, but they may also be abhorred by the people of the world. Our hearts must obey and submit to the will of God. Our hearts must desire to live for the righteousness of God. We must set our hearts, deciding, "As a servant of God, I will no longer live for this world but only for the righteousness of God." In other words, our hearts must first desire to believe in God's righteousness, follow it, and obey it.



The Apostle Paul possessed such a determined heart. That is why He declared, *“I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me”* (Galatians 2:20).

Therefore, for us to serve Christ honorably through our lives, we must set our hearts to live for Him. God does not bless those whose hearts have no desire for God’s righteousness. God works only in the hearts that believe in His righteousness and are set on it. God is with the people of faith who believe in His Word. He is pleased by those who have set their hearts on God. And it is such people whom God helps. God encourages such people’s hearts and opens their spiritual eyes, and in doing so He makes it possible for them to share in His work.

In contrast, God does not bless those who have not set their hearts. Such people who have not set their minds on God keep wondering whether or not they should do God’s work.

We can live for God’s righteousness only if we have the belief that serving the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the proper life that the righteous should live. For us to set our minds on spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our hearts must be determined to live only for the righteousness of God. We should not be double-minded, in other words, thinking, “I’ll preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to this world for now, but if anything goes wrong, I will go out to the world.” Those whose hearts have not been set before God should not expect to receive anything from Him. The Bible said so in James: *“But let him ask in faith, with no doubting, for he who doubts is like a wave of the sea driven and tossed by the wind. For let not that man suppose*



*that he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways” (James 1:6-8).*

We must set our hearts to live with the Lord all the time, determined to live with the gospel of the water and the Spirit no matter what. It is when we thus set our hearts to follow the will of God that God works in our lives. If our hearts are not set on God, then we may very well side with the world one day, and then God’s Church the next day. In other words, when one’s mind is not set, he wavers back and forth, swinging from one side to the other.

When Germany had been divided into East Germany and West Germany, spies were sent to each other from the other, and some of these spies were double-spies. These spies handed over one side’s intelligence to the other, and the other’s intelligence to the former. So they did quite well while it lasted, as they were paid

twice. But Germany was eventually reunited. The most hated people in the reunited Germany were these double-agents. Those who had betrayed their own country only for their selfish end were now hunted down, put on trial, and punished. In contrast, the spies who had worked for one state alone, whether be it East Germany or West Germany, were all forgiven from their spying activities. Immunity was granted because these spies did what they did under the unavoidable circumstances of the divided Germany, for the sake of the government that each served. However, double-spies had to be put on trial. These double-spies were hated by the people of East and West Germany alike. Even now, after more than a decade since the reunification, double-spies are still being hunted down and prosecuted.

If this is what happens even in the secular world, how much more imperative is it for us to



set our hearts? How could you and I, who are working in the Kingdom of God, waver back and forth, setting our hearts on this world one day and on the Kingdom of God the next day? If we do this, we will surely be hated and rejected by both sides. In our lives, we must set our hearts on God's Kingdom and His gospel. Setting our hearts on a straight path is something that befalls on each of us. It's not God's job. God does not force us to do this against our will. The righteous also face suffering sometimes, but some of them suffer needlessly because of their failure to follow God's will.

My fellow believers, set your hearts before God. Your minds must be set on God. Although we are now in God's Church, those of us who never set their hearts even once cannot live properly before God. Such people bring so much trouble to God. When working with them, hardly any spiritual work can be accomplished. They

step aside when it's difficult to follow the Lord, and they follow only when God's work is going well. Is this kind of heart an upright heart before God? Once we set our minds on God, we must march forward plowing through all obstacles by faith. Since we are already God's people and the army of His Kingdom anyways, we should trust in God, take the troubles of His Church as our own troubles, ask for God's help, and do His work with all our strength. However, for those who have not set their minds, whenever they get into trouble while doing God's work, their hearts tip over to the side of the people of this world.

If we now desire to live in God's Church as His spiritual soldiers, and came to the mission school for this purpose, then we must set our minds on God. If you had already set your minds before coming here, then it's even better; however, if you still have not set your minds



even after coming here, then do not put it off and set your hearts as soon as possible.

God knows all about whether or not we have set our hearts on Him. Those who have not set their hearts on God do not even realize when God helps them. Nor do they have faith in God. The spiritual war that we are waging can be fought only if our side is clearly distinguished from the enemy. The enemy should be vanquished and cut down with the sword. If our minds think that we can be this people and that people, how could we wage spiritual war? We must set our hearts as the following: “I belong to God’s people, I belong to Christ, and I am His soldier. I live for the Kingdom of God and His people.” Let us now thus set our hearts.

## **We Are the Lord’s Army Called by Him**

In South Korea, the military is composed of young men drafted into the service. Likewise, God has also drafted us as the spiritual soldiers of His Kingdom. For those who walk as soldiers, it is only proper to follow the One who called them, that is, our Lord, and faithfully defend and expand His Kingdom (2 Timothy 2:4). There can be no room for uncertainty here; unless we are absolutely sure about this, we will face spiritual death.

When we are in a spiritual battleground, how can we survive if our soldiers run away from the battle and hide? Would the enemy save us? There is only one choice: either we surrender to the enemy, or we defeat them by faith and triumph over them. For us not to surrender to the enemy, we must vanquish them. Through the



spiritual power of our faith, we must ensure our spiritual victory. To do so, our hearts must be clearly set.

As for me, I have set my heart on God unwaveringly. I set my mind on God long ago, even before being trained like you. As soon as I met the Lord through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, I set my heart on God and decided to live the rest of my life for His Work.

Those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are precious to God, but this is not how God sees those who have not been born again. When the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit stumble, God says, “It’s no big deal. All humans are like that,” but He has no tolerance for those who are not His people.

We must have a clear identity of faith. The people of Israel regarded anyone who was not their own people, the Gentiles, as little better

than beasts. Do you know the reason for this? Because the Israelites thought that they were God’s chosen people. Even now, they are fighting with Palestinians. Both are descendents of the same forefather in the flesh, that is, Abraham. Abraham first had Ishmael from Hagar, and later he had Isaac according to God’s promise. One son was a child born from the promise of the Word of God, and the other was a child born from Abraham’s relationship with a maidservant.

Like this, God has clearly divided those who have spiritually become His people from those who have not. God has set those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit as His spiritual people, and He has set aside those who do not believe in this gospel as not being His people. If we still cannot distinguish the people of God from those who are not, and if we still have not set our minds on the Kingdom of God,



then how could such people ever wage spiritual war? How would you fulfill the ministry of spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit? We can deliver others from sin only if we know for sure where exactly we belong. How could we otherwise ever achieve this?

My fellow believers, if you still have not set your hearts by any chance, I admonish you all to set your minds on God even at this very moment. Set your hearts properly, deciding to live your lives to build the Kingdom of God. God will then bless you and be pleased to work with you. It is when you decide to live for the Lord that God is pleased and blesses you. God does not work for those who still have not set their minds. Would we be able to do God's work, unless God works with us? No, of course not.

We must make up our minds. We must live for the Kingdom of God, which, after all, is our own Kingdom. Instead of just thinking of ourselves,

we must live for this Kingdom and these people to whom we now belong. My fellow believers, have you set your minds? If so, then you are half way through your training. All that you have to do for the rest of your training is to follow and learn by faith, and unite with the Church. Once the mind is set, the flesh is bound to follow it.

First of all, your hearts must be set to live by faith. That is why God divided edible birds from inedible birds, and edible fish from inedible fish. The fish with scales and fins are apt to swim against the current. In other words, those who have set their hearts live the kind of life that the Lord wants them to live. They go against the current of the times and the world. They do not do their own bidding, but whatever they do, they do for the Lord. They live by faith, even though it may be small. If one's heart is not set, he cannot do God's work, but someone who has set his mind can fulfill the work of faith as God's





soldier. This is what God is trying to say through His work of creation on the fifth day.

Do you believe that God created this universe? Do you believe that God made all life forms, each according to its kind? Of course He did. God actually made birds according to each kind, as He made fish according to each kind. The theory of evolution has blinded people's eyes, and as a result, many of them don't realize what God has accomplished according to the Truth; however, those whose eyes are open can realize clearly that God created this universe and all things in it. He made each of them according to its kind.

My fellow believers, do you believe that this gathering spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit is God's Church? Do you believe that it is the Kingdom of God? It is none other than you who are God's workers, and it is you who have been drafted as His army. Each of us must set our

hearts individually. Our lives change depending on how we have set our hearts on God. What we do may look the same in outside appearance, but the work done by those who have set their hearts to serve the Lord is different.

Those who have set their minds work for God. In contrast, those who have not set their minds live for themselves. As we do God's work, we often come across many who seem to be doing God's work outwardly, but are actually working for themselves.

The Lord speaks about the gospel of the water and the Spirit in the Bible, and He yearns for this gospel to be spread. However, we see that some people are not really interested in God's gospel, but have set all their hearts to seek only their own glory. Such people are still unable to receive the remission of their sins, for they have not set their hearts on the gospel of Truth. In other words, they have no heart for God. A leader at an



evangelical mission once bragged to me saying that students at his mission school were taught for four years. So I asked him, “What do you teach for all those four years?” and his answer was that everything was taught, from conversation etiquette to even including table manners. Such a man is a false teacher.

Pastors must minister according to God’s will. Many people hardly know anything at all, not even a verse of the Word of God, even when they graduate from a theological seminary. What, then, do they learn at the seminary? They learn about a scholarly field called theology, that is, they learn about the ideas of various theologians.

Compared to such seminaries, students at our mission school are learning each and every verse of the tremendous Truth of the Word. Everyone else studies theology for himself, plants a church for himself, accepts offerings for himself, and ministers for himself, all because such people

have not really set their hearts on God. As such, unless you set your hearts on God, you cannot avoid but be like these false prophets, living only for yourselves in the end.

“I abide and live here in God’s Church. It is here that I am preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and therefore if the people of God die, then I, too, will die, and if the people of God prosper, then I will prosper also. Gathering all my strength of faith, I will preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit throughout my entire life, until the day the Lord returns.”

This is how my heart is set on God. “Those gathered here are my people. Here is my kingdom. The Lord’s Kingdom is my kingdom. To expand the Lord’s Kingdom is to expand my kingdom.” My place and duty are thus defined clearly.

Moses worked as a servant of the Kingdom of God, but Jesus Christ came to this earth and



worked as the Master. The Lord came as the Master to save His people. Although Moses did preach the will of God, when Jesus Christ came to this earth, He was baptized by John the Baptist for all of us and took upon all the sins of His people, died for them, rose from the dead again, and has thereby saved them. We should live in the Kingdom of God with a clear awareness of ourselves as its owners. This is to live a life that is distinct from the lives of those who have not set their hearts on God.

Whenever my fellow ministers confide to me how they are struggling, I ask them, “Yes, we are all struggling, but what can we do when all our hardship is for the Lord? Since we are not struggling for ourselves, but for the Kingdom of the Lord, isn’t this all worthwhile? So even though you may be going through a tough time, you should still be dedicated to God’s work. All that matters is the work of God; what else should

we expect? You say that you are too insufficient, and that it’s too hard to follow the Lord. But if we were such good people approved by the whole world, would Jesus Christ have used us as His instruments?”

My fellow believers, would Jesus Christ prefer to use Confucius or Socrates, or would He prefer to use me? Please, think about this honestly, according to how your hearts believe. If you were Jesus Christ, whom would you use, Confucius or me? You would use someone who believes and sets his heart according to how you instruct him. You would prefer someone who obeys only your will as his master, not caring how his ego might be bruised.

If Jesus Christ were to say something to Confucius or Socrates, they would say, “Lord, You really shouldn’t say that,” since they have their own preconceived notions already established. In other words, it is because one has



not set his heart that he wavers back and forth, standing on the people's side sometimes, and at Jesus Christ's side at other times. A teacher of morals and ethics cannot be used as a worker in the Kingdom of Jesus.

Those who are suitable for Jesus Christ to use as His instruments are those among the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit who have set their hearts on God. Only those who have set their hearts unwaveringly on God are suitable to be used by Him. And when someone tries to stand up to Jesus Christ as an equal, God cannot use him as His worker. God uses those who lower themselves before Him and seek first the work of the Lord. Our Lord uses those whom He can freely put to labor.

If Jesus were here, what would He say to those who stand against the gospel? Wouldn't He say, "You worthless scumbags, you brood of vipers, I curse you all"? If so, then we should also stand

against the enemies of God, while showing compassion to the pitiful who deserve our compassion. Becoming His servants means that our hearts have united with God's heart. Our hearts must be set.

Referring to David, God said, "He is a man after My own heart." David wiped out the Philistine army as commanded by the Lord. In contrast, Saul did not fully obey God's order, as he spared some Philistines, and he also spared some good livestock from the spoils to offer them to God as burnt offerings, all based on his own thoughts. But David fully obeyed the Word of God. When God told him to kill all enemies in the battlefield, David killed them all. He exterminated them. Whatever David was commanded to kill, he killed them all, even including animals.

David succeeded Saul and became the king of Israel. But these two men were very different



spiritually. Saul was an impressive man in outside appearance, revered by the people of Israel for his physical attributes, but unlike David, his heart was not set to honor God and to take care of the people of His Kingdom spiritually. Solomon, David's son, also did not set his heart, and so he took many princesses from the neighboring kingdoms as his concubines. When the kings of the neighboring Gentile nations presented their daughters to Solomon, saying, "Your Majesty, this is my daughter," King Solomon said, "Your daughter is very beautiful," and took her as his concubine. He did this because his heart was not set on God.

The women of this world, that is, women who are not born again, are like serpents. They ruin the righteous. You probably read in Judges about how Samson was brought down by Delilah. That is why the Bible calls such women as "harlots." So when Solomon was presented with Gentile

princesses, he should have said, "Why did you bring these women here? They are so ugly. They look like filthy harlots, ruining my appetite. Take them away." If he had said so, the other kings around him would not have brought their daughters to him. God had forbidden Solomon from intermarrying with Gentiles women, and yet despite this, because Solomon's heart was not set, he married whomever he wanted to marry according to the lusts of his flesh, and as a result, he ended up perishing away spiritually.

So the Bible writes, "*And he had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines; and his wives turned away his heart*" (1 Kings 11:3). As a result of this, Solomon later came to confess, "*Vanity of vanities, all is vanity*" (Ecclesiastes 1:2). He died after living such a life of regret, and under his son's reign, God's kingdom was divided into two and began to decline.



Whatever we do, we must set our hearts before God. Do you realize this need? Our hearts must belong to God. Our hearts must believe that God is our God, His Church is our church, and His people are our people. I admonish you all to thus set your hearts.

All our values and standards of judgment that we've had so far must be changed. We must *"put on the new man who is renewed in knowledge according to the image of Him who created him"* (Colossians 3:10). Even at home, I say to my own son, "Although you are my son in the flesh, in the Church, you are the same as all the other people of God. The only difference from them is that you are my son in the flesh; other than this, what is so different spiritually? There is nothing different. Let's be clear on this." And I treat him the same way as the other saints, spiritually speaking. So at first, this did not go so smoothly

for my son, but he eventually agreed, since he also had the Holy Spirit in his heart.

I've seen a certain mission organization basically run on a clan basis, with the leader's family members and relatives occupying key positions. So the leader kept tight surveillance and control over the ministers belonging to his organization. Such people do not serve the Kingdom of God, but they are trying to rebuild the city of Jericho for their own glory. To these people, God warned, *"Cursed be the man before the LORD who rises up and builds this city Jericho; he shall lay its foundation with his firstborn, and with his youngest he shall set up its gates"* (Joshua 6:26).

We don't do this. There are absolutely no privileges for my son in my church. I expect him to serve the Lord as one of the people of God, the same as everyone else. He will perish unless I do this. I do this because I love him. Only then will



he grow in faith and stand on his faith. While I take care of my son when it comes to his carnal weaknesses, what must be established spiritually is clearly established. All this is the strength that comes from having set my heart. We must set our hearts, believe in Jesus Christ and the Word, fight by faith, and build the Kingdom of God by faith.

My fellow believers, I admonish you all to set your minds before God. When we set our hearts time after time, we will come to live by faith, as birds flying in the sky, and like the scaled fish, we will be able to do the work of God to our heart's content.

Once we set our hearts, we can defeat the enemy and triumph by faith. By believing in God, we can do the work that saves sinner's souls from sin. ☒



## The Lives of the People of Faith Who Believe in God's Word With Their Hearts

<Genesis 1:20-23>

**“Then God said, ‘Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens.’ So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, ‘Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.’ So the evening and the morning were the fifth day.”**

In today's Scripture passage, God said, *“Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures.”* Just as the water abounded with fish, even now, countless righteous people who believe in God's Word continue to carry out His work faithfully. Even at this very moment, the Word of God is alive and works with the righteous who walk by faith. It is my sincere hope that the righteous would keep on preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit to sinners, as long as the Word of God exists on this earth.

The Word of God is nurturing our souls to grow and prosper in faith. God's Word continues to nurture the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This world is abounding with more and more believers in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. At the same time, however, Satan is also trying to trouble us. Yet we must stand firmly on our faith. Despite Satan's obstruction, we cannot stop spreading the





gospel of the water and the Spirit.

However, Satan has been working in this world from long ago to the present. He has used all sorts of means to obstruct the Word of God from being spread. In the Garden of Eden, he tried to corrupt God's Word through the cunning serpent. Even now, Satan continues to hinder the people of God, trying to prevent them from serving Jehovah. And he is trying to make everyone commit idolatry, leading all to idols.

Even in the age of the New Testament, the Devil still tried ceaselessly to corrupt the Word of God. However, no matter how Satan tried to corrupt God's Word of Truth, God still preserved His Word and ensured that it would be passed down. From time to time, God provided good Bible versions such as the King James Version, thus enabling people to receive the remission of their sins through His Word.

So this Bible that we are now reading remains

completely intact, exactly as God spoke through His prophets long ago. Everyone in this world now has the written Word of God that lacks nothing to enable him be saved and receive everlasting life. In other words, the Word of God that makes us receive the remission our sins is written in this Bible that we are holding in our hands.

On the other hand, however, Satan has also continued to work. You should realize how erroneous versions of the Bible have so profoundly distorted the will of God. Today's flawed Bible versions are undermining the authority of the Word of God.

The main Scripture passage for today tells us that every sinner on this earth would be saved from sin, and that the saved souls would prosper as well. If this is how God spoke to us, then it will be fulfilled exactly as He spoke. However, Satan is still trying to clutter God's Word even



now, so that even Christians would be prevented from entering Heaven. We need to realize that in the Early Church period and today alike, Satan has put up tremendous obstructions.

However, regardless of how hard the Devil might try to thwart us, when the gospel of the water and the Spirit flourishes on this earth, Satan's obstructions will no longer prevail. Just as God made fish live in the water, the saints who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit will continue to grow in their faith, trusting in the Word of God.

## **Therefore, Our Faith Must Begin Anew by Placing Its Basis in the Word of God**

The Word of God is saving all souls from the sins of this world and making them prosper.

Trusting in God's Word, we should now preach it to even more souls. Then, through us more and more souls shall be saved from the sins of the world and be transformed. We saw how the water abounded with fish because of God's Word. Many people in God's Church are now being raising as workers who preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit through their faith in the written Word of God. It is because God spoke to us with His Word that we have come to exist as righteous people today. I admonish you all to realize this and to believe in it.

The Word of God is the Word of Truth that enables sinners to be saved from their sins. If this is so, and if we have indeed been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit to be saved from all our sins, then what life of faith should we lead? Of course, we have to lead the life of faith that spreads the gospel throughout the whole world. It is in the dominion



of Heaven that we should live, through our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must be one family with God, and we must also live by this faith.

God told us to live like the birds flying in the sky. The righteous should realize that it is their carnal thoughts and emotions that obstruct their way of faith, preventing them from marching forth and fulfilling the will of God by placing their faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That is why God is saying that the only thing He wants from us is to believe in His Word, and to fly across the realm of faith and live in it.

To those who have been born again from all their sins by believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, God is now demanding that they live by placing their faith in His Word. If we have really become God's people by believing in

the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then God now wants us to live by trusting in His Word. God is telling us not to rely on what is on this earth, but rather, to rely on His Word and to live by this faith that we have placed in the Word.

In other words, if we really are believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then God is saying to us, "Live by your faith in Me and My righteousness." If we are God's people who have been saved from the sins of the world, then we ought to fly on the wings of faith, trusting in the Word of God. We must live by faith, believing that if God is pleased, He would permit all things and fulfill them all. God is telling us continuously to live a life that is set toward Him.

Before us, there are two differently worlds. First, the realm that our eyes of the flesh see is this present world. However, there is a dominion of God unseen by in our own eyes of the flesh, and we must remember that this realm is eternal



and is far more substantial than the present world.

God said, *“Let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens.”* The biblical meaning of the firmament here is the space in Heaven. The Word of God speaks about His dominion. It means that it is not on the earthly dominion that the righteous live, but by their faith in the Lord, they are to fly across the dominion of Heaven. In other words, God said that it is when we live in the dominion of faith, where we trust in God's Word, that all His will is freely fulfilled.

God said that if we live in this dominion of faith believing in Him, then He will save even more souls than what we hope and desire. It is by believing in the Word of God that we should live. God has enabled us, who believe in His Word, to live forever.

God did not tell us to live trusting in our own human strength of the flesh. Rather, He told the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit to live by their faith in the Word of God, and then enter the Kingdom of the Lord. In the Word of the righteousness of God, we can live freely by placing our faith in this Word.

However, more things of the earth have already come into our hearts than the Word of God, and so it's not easy to live spiritually with the right faith. Because we have too many earthly desires, we find it quite difficult to live by trusting in the Word of God entirely. When we wonder, “Should I live this way or that way?” we see that rather than pondering on this question within the bounds of the righteousness of God, we often design our lives with our own carnal desires in mind.

God is telling us not to design our lives with the things of the earth. Far from this, He told us



to live by our faith in Him, like the birds flying above the earth across the firmament of the heavens. That's because the righteous should live by their faith in the Word of God, rather than by the things of this earth. To a certain extent, we the righteous also have earthly needs, but a life lived without the Lord is meaningless. In other words, although the dominion of Heaven is not seen in the eyes of the flesh, it is far more significant and valuable than any worldly possessions.

That is why God is saying to us that the earthly domain that our eyes of the flesh see is not all that there is. We need to grasp here the reason why God has shown us, the righteous, His spiritual dominion unseen by the eyes of the flesh. By this, God is telling us to live in the spiritual domain He has prepared for us, by placing our faith in God.

God is saying to us not to live only by what is seen in the eyes of our flesh, but to live by our faith in His written Word. I believe that if we have anything to ask, want, or desire from God, He will surely fulfill all our needs. We should let all our hearts' desires and thoughts be made known to God, who surpasses all understanding, and trust that He will answer us.

We, who have become righteous, must live by our faith in the Word of God. God is telling us to cast aside our narrow-minded thoughts and carnal lives, trying to convince ourselves, "It's okay to spend just a little of what I have to serve the Lord, and then spend the rest all for myself." God tells us to live for His righteousness with the new faith that enables us to abide in His righteousness.



## **Our Lord Enables Us to Live in the Lord**

The Lord said to us, *“Let not your heart be troubled; you believe in God, believe also in Me”* (John 14:1). In other words, God hears our prayers, provides for our needs in His time, and helps us to do His good work. God fulfills His will through you, by answering what you have planned in your minds, and what you ask God within the bounds of His Word. It is when we live according to the Word of God that He fulfills all our needs.

I believe that in this year also, God will continue to save countless souls from sin through His Church. My fellow believers, we should first plant churches and spread the gospel in our country, and lead countless souls in other countries to salvation as well by also planting God's churches throughout the whole wide

world. Establishing God's Church all over the world and spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit are made possible only by placing our faith in the righteousness of God.

When we believed in God's righteousness, seeing our faith, God raised us as His servants, blessed our labor, and worked with us. It is God who called His workers, grew them, and nurtured them. And God established them as His servants, and He saved countless souls through these servants of God. God wants to use us, the members of His Church, as the workers of His Kingdom.

If we try to live only with the things of the earth, we will reach a limit in the end. Therefore, we can lead a spiritual life only by believing in God. God is telling us to fly across the sky. The faith that pleases God is one that is placed in God and His Word. So I admonish you all to indeed fly by your faith. I admonish you to fly across the



sky and see for yourselves with your own experience how God works in this world.

Those who still have not received the remission of their sins cannot know the realm of faith placed in the righteousness of God. How could sinners ever live by faith? They are not living in the dominion of faith, where they believe in God's righteousness, but they are living in the dominion of the lust of their flesh. The righteous must trust in God's righteousness, they must know and believe what really pleases God, and they must live accordingly.

To have the belief that God would fulfill all His will is to have true faith. But, what about you? Do you really believe that God will lead you with His benevolence? If we live in this realm of faith, we will surely live our lives full of energy and receive such great heavenly blessings.

It is my sincerest hope that you, too, would all now live in the faith that is placed in the righteousness of God. You need to realize just how rejoiced God would be when you believe in His righteousness. Referring to the righteous, the Bible writes,

*"The LORD your God in your midst,  
The Mighty One, will save;  
He will rejoice over you with gladness,  
He will quiet you with His love,  
He will rejoice over you with singing"*  
(Zephaniah 3:17).

God will rejoice if we live by our faith in His righteousness. Therefore, rather than saying that we would drink and eat the things of the earth, and live and die in vain like this, we have to set our hearts on God. God said, *"The just shall live by faith."* I admonish you all to preach the righteousness of God until the day you are called home by God.



Abraham Lincoln abolished slavery in the United States, and for this achievement, he became one of the most admired figures in American history. The righteous are the ones who live for God's righteousness that enables sinners to be freed for all their sins. This is indeed the most admirable life in this world. If the people of God on this earth really live by faith for God and for their fellow human beings—that is, if they dedicate their lives to turn many people back to Jesus Christ—then they will shine like the sun forever and be glorified, both on this earth and in the new heaven and earth to come. God said, *“Those who are wise shall shine Like the brightness of the firmament, And those who turn many to righteousness Like the stars forever and ever”* (Daniel 12:3); *“Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!”* (Matthew 13:43)

I admonish you all to live such a life. None other than this is the true life of faith. Even on this earth, it is the names of those who have done what is right that shine. Likewise, it is those who live according to the faith of Truth in the Kingdom of the Lord, in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and in the Truth, who will shine forever in Heaven. To the born-again who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, God has told them to live by faith without fail.

On the fifth day of creation, God said to us to live by faith. When the sixth day comes, God would now make man, and He would rest on the seventh day. I beseech you all to realize that in His plan for us here, God is commanding us all to live by faith. You must know that faith in God is all contained in His plan of the creation of the heavens and the earth. And you should also grasp that it is this faith that God wants from you. I ask





each and every one of you to know that God's plan is for you to live by faith.

Let us turn to Genesis 1:21 here: *"So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good."*

God is the Maker. He is the Creator. What did God make then? That God made big fish and living creatures, and that He also created every bird according to its kind, mean that He made the people of faith in His providence. God is the One who creates faith in us. He gives us faith, He brings forth faith in us, and He desires for us to follow Him by faith.

If you abide in God's Church, God will give you even more faith in His righteousness. At first, He will expose the futility of your own human effort. The born-again can come into the

dominion of faith and learn to live by faith only if their effort to follow the Lord with their earthly possessions is completely exhausted. And their measure of faith will then increase more and more, as they will come to entirely trust in the Lord. In other words, someone who has once used his faith can continue to use even greater faith, and so his faith gradually grows as he comes to have greater faith.

For those who have once lived in the Lord by faith, their faith may be as small as a mustard seed at first, but down the road, this faith will grow and their hearts will also be spiritualized. So you shouldn't worry over not having enough faith in God. God will raise this faith in you and me, and He will nurture our faith to grow.

Even now, God continues to make us. You need to remember that just as God made the stars, He is molding us into the people of faith. He is shaping you and me into the people of



faith. To those who are now relying only on their flesh, God is breaking down their carnal elements. God is making it impossible for us live without believing in Him. This is the very will of God.

When we encounter certain difficulties, if we try to solve them with some sort of human means, we will only end up facing even more difficulties. In times like this, if we believe in God, rely on Him and follow Him, then God will resolve all our issues and, in doing so, teach us about true faith. God wants our faith to grow. It is none other than God Himself who does everything in His Church. That is why our God nurtures us, as a parent nurtures a child.

We have now come into the dominion of faith, where we believe in the righteousness of God. If you believe in God's righteousness and live by faith, then you will now be molded just as those others who are spiritually blessed; however, if

you otherwise live your lives without believing in God, then you will only suffer on this earth. It's never too late; even now, you should live by placing your faith in the righteousness of God.

Our faith may be as small as a mustard seed, but when this faith in God's righteousness grows more and more, it will enable us to fly across the whole heavenly realm, see all the beautiful dominion of Heaven, enjoy all the heavenly things forever, and live in joy and happiness. It is in the dominion of faith that we are made to participate in God's ministry freely, enjoy His blessings freely, and see all His glory. That is one of God's blessed providences bestowed upon us.

On the fifth day, God wanted us to live by faith. God is telling us to have faith in Him, and He is telling us that it is when we have this faith that our faith grows. If you believe in God's gospel of the water and the Spirit, you will surely



receive the remission of your sins. But if you do not believe, then the remission of your sins will be forever out of your reach.

Do you pray to God to solve your problems and worries, spiritual or otherwise? I believe that if you believe in God, He will surely resolve all these problems wonderfully. On the other hand, however, if you do not believe in God and rely on Him, and instead rely on man-made thoughts, means, or methods, then God's hands of grace will move away from you. He will say, "Try all you want, since you think you can do it by yourself." Trusting in God, we must place all our expectations on Him, and see for ourselves how God changes our circumstances and how He works in our lives.

## **We Should Rely on God**

God said that those who rely on their own human strength instead of God are all evil. The "Nephilim" (Genesis 6:4) in the Bible are precisely such people. These refer to men of enormous strength, or giants. God brings down those who are like the Nephilim, like Goliath. But God raises those who rely on Him like David as His servants and works through them.

No matter what glory anyone might have, God has the power to make it disappear like the morning dew. He can bring down all the things of the earth over night. However, to those who rely on God, He allows them to stand firm in the dominion of Heaven forever, and He shows them how to shine His light for eternity.

Are you relying on the things of the flesh? Or are you relying on the God of Truth? I admonish you all to rely on God. I admonish you to rely on



God whenever you encounter any problems. I want all of us to ask the Lord for help, trust in Him, wait for Him, and know His will. We must follow the Lord, place all our expectations on His work, and seek after the Lord. I believe that God will make such people prosper and bless their way. And I want none of you to rely on the things of the earth. The things of the earth destroy us. They lead us astray, and, moreover, they shall perish away instantly. So I admonish you all to rely on God who is forever.

Countless people have lived on this earth, but of all these people, it is in the hearts of those who rely on the righteousness of God that the everlasting light has sprung forth. However, for those who do not rely on the righteousness of God, they will never be found in His Kingdom. No matter how virtuous they might have been, God has rendered the good deeds of those who do not rely on His righteousness all futile.

Many great powers rose and fell in Western history, from the Roman Empire to the Holy Roman Empire, the Kingdom of Spain, the British Empire, and the United States of America. For a while, Britain had been a great power with so many colonies that it was called “the empire where the sun never set.” The rise and fall of great powers in Western history coincided with the rise and fall of their Christian faith. Put differently, while a country was relying on and fearing God, it became more and more prosperous, but once it relied on the power of its state, on its might, and on the military strength of its warships, its glory could no longer last forever.

In contrast, for the nations that truly rely on God, and for the people who rely on God, the grace of God does not disappear. The righteous become brighter and brighter in the light of God by faith, as it is written,



*“The path of the just is like the shining sun,  
That shines ever brighter unto the perfect  
day” (Proverbs 4:18).*

It is God's will for the righteous to reveal His light of Truth. Therefore, after being born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, when we stand on the crossroads to decide whether we would continue to live by our faith in the Lord or by relying on what is in the world, we must clearly choose the way of faith that believes in the righteousness of God.

Even the people of faith who believe in God's righteousness may go astray while living in this world. Once, David tried to count the number of Israelites, however, God did not want him to take a census. God abhors reliance on the flesh the most. As God abhors when one relies on his own strength—that is, when his heart relies on the things of the earth—it is written in the Bible that God punished David, and countless people in

Israel died as a result. So, when the people of faith try to rely on the things of the earth, God blocks them and prevents them from embarking on this mistaken path.

My fellow believers, we must have our Lord in our hearts, follow Him, and live our lives doing what pleases God by faith. Once we know God's Truth, we must rely on the Lord and trust in Him today, as we must rely and trust in Him tomorrow—indeed, we must continue to trust in the Lord alone for the rest of our lives. Let us therefore never falter but always rely on the Lord until the day we reach the everlasting dominion.

If only you have faith in the righteousness of God, God will surely bless you. Because we believe in God's righteousness, we can have every spiritual blessing of God. God will fulfill everything in due time. In time, He will exalt you high.



So have faith. Believe in God. Believe in the Lord's righteousness. Trust in the guidance of God's Church. Believe in the works of the righteousness of God that God Himself manifests in His Church. If faith in the Lord is found in your hearts, in the hearts of all our brothers and sisters, God will then raise you to an even more honorable place. And I believe that God will use you as His instruments to fulfill His plan.

Therefore, we need to use our faith often, relying on the Lord. Rather than relying on the Lord just a little in times of hardship, only to rely on the world again when the hardship is gone, you should rely on the Lord no matter what, and your hearts should always be set on God alone. We cannot let our hearts be lost to the world. Above all, we must keep our hearts. We must indeed defend our faith. As we carry on with our lives, we must obey the will of the Lord, have faith in Him, and keep our hearts.

God wants to see if there is anyone on this earth who is looking for Him. When God sees someone who believes in Him and has the Lord dwelling in him, God will work through this person. And God will bless such people who rely on Him, just as the Bible says, *"God blessed them, saying, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.'"*

Whom does God bless on this earth? It is those who believe in God's righteousness, who walk according to the statutes of God, His Word. In other words, it is the people of faith whom God blesses. God blesses those who really believe in Him. He does not bless those who are zealous only in outside appearance.

God intervenes in our lives as those who believe in His righteousness, He cares about us, He listens to us, and He works in our lives. Do you believe in this? Do you believe in this love,



with which God has blessed you and me? Do you believe that you and I cannot live but by our faith in God? Do you believe that if we believe in God, He will be rejoiced to bless us? Yes, please do believe in all these things.

God blesses those who have been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and who, from then on, live by trusting in the righteousness of God. When we trust in God's righteousness and follow it, God will fill us with unspeakably precious blessings. If we obey the will of God, He will bless us a thousand-fold and a million-fold. That's because God has wanted to bless all of us from the very beginning of the creation of the heavens and the earth.

Therefore, we should become one heart with the Lord set to expand the Kingdom of God on this earth, and serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit by faith. None other than this is the

shortcut to receiving God's great blessings. Though our beginning may be humble and many people may be unimpressed by us, if our hearts have faith in God, then that is more than sufficient. Through us, God will then majestically fulfill all that He wants to do. Amen! ☒

## **The Reason Why God Made Us in the Likeness of His Image**

**<Genesis 1:24-31>**

**“Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind’; and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing**

**that creeps on the earth.’ So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. Then God blessed them, and God said to them, ‘Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.’ And God said, ‘See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food. Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food’; and it was so. Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day.”**





After creating everything in this world, the very last thing that God created was mankind. The Bible says that when God created mankind, He created him according to His image and in His likeness. From today's Scripture passage in Genesis, we can discover the God of Trinity.

The God whom we believe is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. When God created the heavens and the earth, these three Persons of God—the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit—created mankind according to God's image. From what God said here, *“Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness,”* we should be able to discover the Triune God. God created mankind according to His image. And the One who created this world and mankind was the Triune God: God the Father, Jesus Christ His Son, and the Holy Spirit. It is this God who created the heavens and the earth, everything between them, and mankind itself.

On the sixth day, the last day of His creation, God created mankind according to His image by the work of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. God said, *“Let Us make man in Our image,”* and He made him accordingly.

What, then, is man? Who are human beings? They are the ones who conform to the likeness of God's image. Does this then mean that when God created mankind according to His image, He wanted to create us as His sons and daughters from the very beginning? Yes. We need to realize and properly understand God's plan in creating mankind according to His image. From the very beginning, God created human beings in the likeness of His image, to enjoy His power and glory.

We should realize that the purpose for which God created man and woman was to establish His Church. That God created a woman out of the man's rib foretells the fact that God the



Father would fulfill His will through Jesus Christ. This reveals God's plan through His Church, and the One who made and fulfilled such a plan is the Triune God.

God created everyone in the likeness of His image, and this was planned by God to fulfill His purpose. Long before the foundation of the world, God the Father had already planned in Jesus Christ His Son to have us as His children. To fulfill this plan of God the Father, His Son Jesus Christ came to this earth, was baptized by John the Baptist, shouldered the sins of the world, died on the Cross, rose from the dead again, and has thereby completed the will of the Father. The Holy Spirit, on the other hand, guarantees the salvation that God the Father and Jesus Christ accomplished. Jesus Christ completed the will of God the Father in obedience.

## **How Was the Will of God the Father Fulfilled?**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit are the same God to us. The Bible proclaims that God the Father chose us and predestined us in Jesus Christ even before the foundation of the world, and He fulfilled His planned will in Jesus Christ (Ephesians 1:3-5). In other words, God the Father had predestined His will toward us in Jesus Christ and fulfilled it. All this means that in Jesus Christ His Son, God the Father created us as His children in the likeness of His image. Put differently, God fulfilled this with the consultation of the Father, His Son Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit. Like this, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit planned to create us gloriously and fulfilled it.

God the Father planned to create us as His children, and His Son Jesus Christ, in obedience



to the will of His Father, was baptized by John the Baptist, died on the Cross, and rose from the dead again. By being baptized by John the Baptist and taking upon the sins of the world, as well as by dying on the Cross while shouldering our sins, and by rising from the dead again, Jesus Christ Himself blotted out the sins of mankind, thus fulfilling the will of God. God the Father wanted to create us as His children. So, to all those who believe in His Son, He gave the right to become His children.

How, then, did God restore us human beings to His children, made in the likeness of His image? He achieved this all at once with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. When God created the heavens and the earth, He created man and woman and fulfilled His will. He fulfilled His will by saving us and creating us as His children through His Son Jesus Christ.

That is why He created mankind according to His image.

God created man, male and female, according to His image and He said, “*Therefore, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh*” (Genesis 2:24). This is His will, and He wants us human beings to be one with Him by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That is why when God created the heavens and the earth and created mankind, He created man and woman. When God created them, He had the saved, righteous people in His mind, planning to save them through Jesus Christ.

Thanks to His will, those who believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior could achieve their purpose of existence just by faith. We are reborn as God’s children through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ has given us. In other words, the sinners of this world can become



God's children only when they believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ has given us, and thereby receive the remission of their sins. It is from God that we receive the right to become His children.

Once we become God's children by believing in His gospel of the water and the Spirit, God gives us everything else that belongs to Heaven. The Lord Himself becomes the Master of us all. So we have no doubt whatsoever that we have indeed become one of those who conform to the likeness of God's image.

How have we come to conform to the image of God? It is through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God's purpose was fulfilled in creating mankind in His image from the very beginning. From the very beginning, God had planned to create us human beings as His children, and this plan of God the Father was all fulfilled in Jesus Christ.

Had God made us His children unconditionally without Jesus Christ, then all other creatures would have rebelled. Of course, this does not mean that God somehow feared the rebellion of His own creatures, but it does mean that God did not want to be an unjust God. As God's name must not be damaged, God had a just plan for our salvation in Jesus Christ from the very beginning. In this light, it is God's blessing found in Jesus Christ that we were first born on this earth as creatures.

God has made us His children, who are at the same level as His Son Jesus Christ. How has God the Father put us on the same order as Jesus Christ, as His brothers and sisters? God the Father has accomplished the way for us to be His children within the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus has completed. Therefore, we must have the proper knowledge of the gospel of



the water and the Spirit, which is the crystallization of the love of God.

First of all, we must realize what God's plan is. God the Father planned our salvation in Jesus Christ before the foundation of the world, and He fulfilled it once for all within the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. This is clearly testified by Ephesians 1:4-5. *"Just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love, having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will."* It is in God's plan that our salvation has been achieved. This is the plan of God revealed in Ephesians chapter one. That is how we have come to wholly conform to the image of God in Jesus Christ. In other words, God the Father created mankind in this world so that we would conform to the likeness of His image.

In general, the so-called founders of worldly religions try to deify themselves. We see countless people trying on their own to reach a divine state, all in vain. For everyone, however, it is only when one meets Jesus Christ through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that he can receive the grace of the remission of his sins and become one of God's people. This is the very purpose for which God created human beings born in this world, and it is the Truth that is fulfilled in its entirety to all those who believe in God and follow His Word.

That we were born in this world, and have met Jesus Christ who came by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, is such a tremendous blessing that there is nothing more we could wish. It means that the purpose for which we were born in this world has now been fulfilled, that the will of God has also been fulfilled. That is how we have come to truthfully enjoy real rest in God's plan



and discover the real meaning behind our birth. It is in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have found the purpose for which we were born in this world and the meaning of our existence.

## **When God First Created Mankind, Why Did He Create Man and Woman?**

God created Adam first. And He had him fall asleep, took one of his ribs, and created woman out of this rib. God thus created mankind, male and female. For what purpose did He create them? It was to bless them in Jesus Christ. God the Father wanted to turn us, the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, into His own sons and daughters, all through Jesus Christ who was in the Father. As God the Father gave up His

only begotten Son for His loved ones, Jesus Christ the Son of God came to this earth, was baptized by John the Baptist, and because of this He bore the sins of this world. As Jesus Christ shouldered the sins of the world, He had to shed His blood and die on the Cross, and by rising from the dead again, He fulfilled the Father's will. In other words, it is through His Son that God the Father has created us as His children.

Put differently, God the Father created us out of this Man, His Son. With the rib that He took from Adam, God created the woman—that is, He created us in Jesus Christ. And the Man (Jesus Christ) loved the woman (us) so much. So, when Adam was presented with Eve, he said,

*“This is now bone of my bones  
And flesh of my flesh;  
She shall be called Woman,  
Because she was taken out of Man”  
(Genesis 2:23).*



When we believe in Jesus Christ as our Savior, and when we receive the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we are able to be born again as God's children. When Jesus Christ was baptized by John the Baptist, God the Father said, "*This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased*" (*Matthew 3:17*). In other words, God the Father loved Jesus Christ more than any other of the creatures in this world.

It is because of Jesus Christ who came by the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have become God's children. Who sent Jesus Christ to this world? It is God the Father who sent us His only begotten Son, and He has saved us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God loved the world so much that He gave up His only begotten Son, meaning that He decided to save us the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. To save us from our sins, God the Father

sent His most cherished Son, His only begotten Son, as a creature.

To allow us to conform to the likeness of His image, God sent His Son to this earth, and through the gospel of the water and the Spirit fulfilled by His Son, God washed away all the sins of the world. And He decided to save all who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is the salvation of mankind that God the Father has achieved in His Son Jesus Christ, and it is the mystery of salvation that He has revealed through His Church.

## **Those Who Still Have Not Received the Remission of Their Sins Cannot Understand God's Plan**

God knew all about us, and by sending His Son to this earth, He fulfilled the work of saving



us from the sins of the world. In other words, God the Father already knew what Satan would do later on, and so He made us accordingly in His plan. Before the foundation of the world, God the Father chose us in Jesus Christ, and He was already designing our salvation long before we were born in this world, even before this universe was created. And God concretely fulfilled His envisioned plan of salvation in Jesus Christ. In other words, He fulfilled this plan and achieved our salvation once for all through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

God created mankind, male and female, according to His image. This means that God wanted to reveal His will through the Man (Jesus) and a woman (we) that He placed in this world. God the Father had a plan to make it possible for all the sinners of this world to become His children through Jesus Christ. So only when we realize God's will toward us

through the gospel of the water and the Spirit can we understand the Holy Trinity.

God said, *“Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness.”* Then, He created man and woman, and entrusted all creation to them to rule over everything.

Did God really make us according to His image? Is the image of God like the image of man? The Apostle John saw the image of Jesus Christ, and he described Him as having *“eyes like a flame of fire, and His feet like fine brass”* (Revelation 2:18). The phrase “God's image” does not mean the countenance or the appearance of God, because God is Spirit. Rather, this phrase refers to His divine attributes, implying that God made His people to be the partakers of His divine nature (2 Peter 1:4).

God's people are those among mankind who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the





Spirit. Now, they have become the partakers of the divine nature.

What is the nature of God? First of all, He is love. Our God is a merciful God who bestows upon us His abundant love. God has compassion for sinner's souls, and He has mercy on the powerless. And the hearts of the righteous also conform to the image of God. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, who have received the remission of their sins, also possess God's attributes.

God has no evil. One aspect in which God is different from mankind is that He is incapable of lying. God is just. And in the hearts of the born-again, there is God's justice. God is perfect. He is without any defects. And He has made us the born-again perfect in Christ. It is by faith that mankind is made perfect like God. That is why God said to Abraham, "*Walk before Me and be*

*blameless*" (*Genesis 17:1*). The righteous have blameless hearts.

God the Father planned all these things, and He wanted to fulfill His plan through His Son. So, through Jesus Christ, God has saved us from our sins, through gospel of the water and the Spirit. Having fulfilled all our salvation, Jesus ascended to the right hand of the throne of God, and He will return as the Lord at His second coming. God the Father planned our salvation, and Jesus Christ has saved us from our sins through His water and blood. When we accept this Truth of salvation into our hearts, God the Holy Spirit approves our faith and seals us, saying, "You are right. I am Your God. You are My children." So, there is the Triune God—the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit—and all these three Persons of God are the same God to us, whom He made according to the likeness of His image.



The doctrine of Trinity is the most important subject of theology. But, sinners whose hearts have not been washed from their sins do not understand the concept of the Holy Trinity. We cannot understand this spiritual concept unless the Holy Spirit gives us its understanding. Without having the Holy Spirit in our hearts, we cannot even recognize Jesus Christ as our Savior. If it were not for the Holy Spirit, we could not have Jesus Christ as our Savior in our hearts, and we cannot call God the Father “Abba, Father.” Therefore, if we have no faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we can never reach the proper understanding of the Holy Trinity.

Of course, with your words you might always say that Jesus Christ is your Savior. But without the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you are unable to make the true confession of your faith, that Jesus Christ is your Savior. In other words, it is through the Word of the Scriptures that God is

telling us about the Father’s plan and the salvation of Jesus Christ who has saved us. God seals us with the Holy Spirit to affirm that He has made us righteous.

Having saved us and made us righteous through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, God is saying, “You have no sin. You are My children. You are God’s children.” So, by saving us from the sins of the world, God has enabled us to realize this plan of the Triune God. God said that He planned our salvation through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that He fulfilled our salvation to perfection through Jesus Christ, and that He Himself sealed all those who believe in this with the Holy Spirit. God said that He would never leave us, who, in Jesus Christ, have been saved through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The Apostle Paul said, *“For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor*



*principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Romans 8:38-39).* God has saved us and perfectly made us His children. None other than this is the will of God that He has achieved by saving us from sin. In other words, it is by God’s perfect Word of Truth that our salvation was achieved and we have become God’s children.

This Truth of salvation is not learnt from man. It is neither from man, nor by man. One can attain salvation only by believing in Jesus Christ’s gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. The Bible says that it is by the providence of God the Father, by the sacrifice of our Jesus Christ, and by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit that we have become God’s children.

If God had not planned our salvation in Jesus Christ, then Jesus Christ would not have come to

this earth. Neither would He have been baptized by John the Baptist for us, nor would there have been any need for Him to be crucified and shed His blood and bleeding to death while shouldering the sins of the world, far less to rise from the dead again. And, of course, there would have been no need to ascend to the right hand of the throne of God either, nor any need to return. Jesus Christ, the Son of God the Father, clearly came to this earth to save us from the sins of the world, and by delivering us from the sins of the world through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, He has indeed made us God’s people.

Even though Jesus Christ has saved us from the sins of this world and is asking us to believe in this, if we ourselves do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then the Holy Spirit will not seal us with the final approval. Therefore, unless our faith is perfected in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, everything is



in vain. As we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to others, when they believe, the Holy Spirit seals their hearts right away. So they, too, are testified to as God's children. In other words, the Holy Spirit and the Word of God approve those who have received the remission of their sins, saying, "You're right! You have no sin!"

Although all that we did was just accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Holy Spirit now dwells in our hearts. Our salvation was achieved in the Triune God. The Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit alike are God, and this God is the same, one God to us.

We must accept into our hearts that Jesus Christ has saved us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit according to the plan that God the Father designed for us. We will then become God's children. We know and believe that as God is Triune, Jesus Christ's Father is our Father, and He is also our Shepherd. When we

believe that God the Father planned to send Jesus Christ to this earth in the flesh of man, and that Jesus Christ has saved us from our sins through His water and blood, we will then become God's children.

We the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit now speak about the Triune God so easily and believe in it without any trouble. In fact, for the righteous, the Truth about God is not that difficult. "God loved us. That's why He sent His Son, out of His love for us. God has saved us from sin through His most beloved, only begotten Son. So by believing in the water and blood of this Jesus Christ, we have been saved. Not only have we been saved from sin, but we have also become God's children."

The principle of our salvation is like that of marriage. Just as when a man and a woman love each other in this world a child is born, God the Father made us His children through His Son.



That's why commenting on marriage, the Apostle Paul said, "*For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.*" *This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church*" (Ephesians 5:31-32). Our salvation is like a marriage; for a man and a woman to get married is just like God marrying us. As God has made us His children, He and we have become one body.

To sinners, however, there is no way to explain the Triune God. We cannot comprehend the Holy Trinity unless we receive the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Even when one has received the remission of his sins, if the concept of the Holy Spirit is explained too complicatedly, it would only cause a headache. One can understand this concept only when it is explained in easy terms;

otherwise, when discussed too complicatedly, it's hard to comprehend.

The human heart tends to be ruthless at times. Even the born-again may seem quite callous from time to time, but they are in fact very gentle. The righteous have no desire to harm anyone. That is because we have been born again into new creations in God's likeness, according to His image (2 Corinthians 5:17). We who have received the remission of all our sins have God's heart.

On the sixth day of creation, on this last day, God created mankind, and He made us according to His image. For six days God created the universe and everything in it, and on the seventh day He rested. That God rested on the seventh day manifests that He has completed our salvation once for all. The number seven manifests God's perfection, signifying that God planned our salvation and implemented His



blueprint of salvation as solid as concrete. So in this way, God created mankind according to His image. We are the very craftsmanship that God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit created together in unity.

Those who do not believe in Jesus Christ do not actually believe in the Triune God. They do not believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, nor that He is God Himself. They can't even understand this spiritual concept. As a result, they demand to know where the biblical foundation for the Holy Trinity is found.

But the substance of the Triune God is found right here, in Genesis 1:26. *“Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness.’”* Did Jehovah, God the Father, say here, “Let Me make man by Myself all alone according to My likeness and My image”? No, He said, “Let Us make man in Our image.” These plural words here show that God is Triune.

To repeat, God said, *“Let Us make man in Our image.”* This refers to the Triune God, that is, to the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. So those who believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior say that Jesus Christ is their Lord. They say that the Lord is the God who created them and has saved them from sin. What about the Holy Spirit then? They also call Him as the Holy God. As the Holy Spirit dwells in us always, He keeps us and leads us. So, the Bible says that without the Spirit of Jesus Christ, we are not His people.

That is why we say that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit are the same God to us. These three Persons of God have saved us perfectly. Jesus Christ did not complete our salvation all by Himself, but He saved us according to the will of the Father. When Jesus was on this earth, He walked according to the Father's will. He said, *“But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become*



*children of God, to those who believe in His name.”*

That is how God has created us as His children. God the Father planned to blot out our sins and make us His children through His Son Jesus Christ, and to fulfill this plan, Jesus Christ came to this earth, was baptized, died on the Cross, rose from the dead in three days, and has thereby blotted out all our sins completely. Now, those who believe in this Jesus Christ as their Savior, God approves them, saying, “You are My children. All other creatures are just creatures, but you, you are My own children.”

God actually wants to accept everyone as His child (1 Timothy 2:4). Yet because many people listen to the Devil’s words, and do not accept God’s salvation and refuse to believe that God has saved them through His Son to be completely sinless, they are not only unable to become

God’s children, but they actually end up becoming the Devil’s children.

By now, you should be able to understand the Triune God. Surely, our salvation from sin did not come by accident. Our salvation was all planned and achieved through the Triune God, and so all that we do is just believe in this Truth. Because the Holy Spirit guarantees our salvation, saying, “You are My children,” we call Him our Helper, the One who assists us.

When someone goes bankrupt, whoever guaranteed his debt must pay it all off, however, in our case, it is none other than the Holy Spirit who guarantees our salvation. No matter what kind of insufficiencies we may have, and no matter how Satan may accuse us to have sin, the Holy Spirit guarantees our salvation, saying, “I’ll be your guarantor. You are God’s children for sure. You have no sin.” God planned for us to be righteous, and He fulfilled this through the



gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is the work that God did on the sixth day of creation.

God told us, “Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.” How can we be fruitful and multiply? We can multiply only if we marry Jesus Christ.

God told us, “Fill the earth.” Do human beings now fill the earth? Yes, considering that the world population now exceeds 6 billion, isn’t it rather obvious that the earth is now filled with mankind? Did God’s Word go unfulfilled? No, it came to pass according to God’s Word.

God also said, “Have dominion over every living thing.” Don’t human beings have dominion over all living creatures? No matter how large a beast might be, it’s still dominated by mankind. There is no beast that can overcome mankind. A beast may overcome human beings

momentarily with its brute strength, but no beast can ever fully overcome mankind, who is wise and knows how to use tools. There is no beast that is smarter than mankind. That is why God said that He made us according to His image.

All that is on this earth is a shadow of Heaven. Having created us, God told us to reign over His creation. He will also have us reign over the Kingdom of Heaven, to enjoy this majestic, beautiful, and everlasting domain, so magnificent that it’s beyond description. Through Jesus Christ, His only begotten Son, God created human beings according to His image and took them in as His own children, and He will fill the Kingdom of Heaven with these children to enjoy its everything. This is God’s plan. It’s His everlasting, eternal plan. That is why Jesus Christ said, “I am now going to the Kingdom of the Father, but I go there to prepare a place for you,





and I will come again” (John 14:1-3). He said so promising to live with us.

It is to enable us to enjoy the blessing of everlasting life in the Kingdom of Heaven that God created us be born and has saved us. So, to believe in Jesus Christ is to receive tremendous blessings.

Who would ever plan to save us, sacrifice Himself to deliver us, forsake the throne of glory and save us through His water and blood, and give us the same glory and authority as His own? What god or creature would ever do this? Only God did this because He loved us. That is why we are so happy to have received the remission of our sins. No one is as happy as those who have received the remission of their sins. Having stored all the heavenly treasures for us, God is now waiting for us. It is to give us all the treasures of Heaven, its entire Kingdom, that

God made us born on this earth. And through Jesus Christ, He has made us His children.

To believe in Jesus Christ is to be blessed. As long as we live in this world, there will be different seasons for us, spring and summer, fall and winter. However, God has blessed us in all aspects of our lives. We have already received heavenly blessings. God has given us all the spiritual blessings of Heaven that are beyond description. You have all received them. All those who now believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit have already received wonderful blessings.

In the Kingdom of God, there is no difference of sex. We the children of God, both men and women, will reign forever. We will remain God’s children for eternity. We will lord over even the angels. Angels will say to us, “Welcome, master,” and we will say to them, “Take me up



and let's go for a ride.” We have received such blessings.

Furthermore, God has called us as His witnesses. We are the witnesses of the gospel called by God to receive everlasting blessings, and to do God's precious work on this earth.

We believe in the righteousness of God and we give our thanks to Him. When God made us, He made us for the purpose of turning us into His own children. Had God made us merely as ordinary creatures and just ended there, then we would have amounted to nothing. God has a great plan for us, He does great things, He has entrusted us with everything, and He has given us the authority and right to rule over everything. He has given all this to us through Jesus Christ, and through the Church. That God has given us these blessings through the Church means that it is through Jesus and the servants of God who believe in Jesus Christ that God is dispensing

every spiritual blessing of Heaven to His believers.

The Apostle Paul described us “*As unknown, and yet well known; as dying, and behold we live; as chastened, and yet not killed; as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things*” (2 Corinthians 6:9-10).

We are such people. We may seem to have nothing, but we are magnificent. Do not be saddened even if the affairs of the world make you suffer. You are all living a life that is more than worthwhile. There is no one else on this planet who has received the remission of sin but only we. This wonderful blessing came to us not because of our own merit, but all because of Jesus Christ.

Because we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and because we are spreading this gospel, it is we who have been saved, it is we



who are loved by God, and it is we who are His precious servants. None other than we ourselves are God's cherished people.

I give all my thanks to the Triune God who has saved us from our sins. ☒



## We Were Made in the Image of God

<Genesis 1:24-31>

“Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind’; and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.’ So God created man

in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. Then God blessed them, and God said to them, ‘Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.’ And God said, ‘See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food. Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food’; and it was so. Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day.”



Today's Scripture passage describes the sixth day of the creation of the heavens and the earth. Chapter one of the Book of Genesis provides a broad blueprint for God's plan that allows us to see the plan in its entirety. And it foretells God's completion of this design.

Our God created mankind for His glory, so that we should be to the praise of His glory. As Genesis 2:1 says, "Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished," with His work on the sixth day, God completed everything He sought to do.

On the sixth day, as God said, *"Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind,"* it was done as He commanded. As God made animals of the earth, He saw that it was good. After creating all the cattle, beasts, and creepy things of the earth

according to each kind, God said, *"Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness."*

## **Mankind Was Made in God's Image**

What is God's image? On the last day of creation, God said, *"Let us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness."* This implies how God would create us to be His children.

Until the fifth day of the creation of the heavens and the earth, God had created the sun, the moon, the stars in the heavens, aquatic creatures such as fish, and birds in the sky. And on the sixth day of creation God created all the land-dwelling animals, from cattle to creepy things to the beasts of the earth. After this, our God now wanted to allow His children to live in the Garden of Eden.



When God said, “*Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness,*” He truly wanted to create mankind in His image and likeness. This image of God refers to the children of God who are completely sinless before Him. So, put differently, God wanted to create holy people on this earth—that is, the righteous.

My fellow believers, for what purpose did God create us humans? God first prepared our Savior for us, then on the last day He wanted to create us as His children, and He did indeed create us. God says, “So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him.” To make us conform to the image of God through the salvation of Jesus Christ was the very purpose for which God made us. So we are God’s craftsmanship made in His likeness.

The masterpiece of all the creatures made by God is none other than mankind, created in the image of God. That God created human beings,

who are no more than mere creatures, as His own children in the likeness of His divine attributes is God’s providence. God first made the whole universe and then He created Adam on the very last day of creation. On this last day God created made the masterpiece of all masterpieces, and this was none other than mankind, whom God made righteous and sinless according to His image and His likeness, and turned into God’s children to partake in His divine attributes, all through redemption in Jesus Christ. This is the Truth.

When the Bible says, “Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished,” it indicates the fact that our God created us on the last day. On the sixth day of the creation of the heavens and the earth, God created mankind, but He did so only after creating everything else. Moreover, God did not just created mankind like all other creatures, but



He created it according to His image, according to “Our likeness.”

What, then, does it mean that God created human beings in His image? It means that as God has no sin, He created mankind sinless; as God is righteous, He created mankind righteous; and as God is King, He made human beings as His sinless and righteous children, so that they may succeed the authority of His Kingship.

## **We Are the Masterpiece of God’s Creation**

We have received the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of the righteousness of God. That we have received the remission of our sins is the very reflection of our creation by God, made according to His image and likeness. God

created mankind in the likeness of His image on the last day of creation, on its sixth day.

When we consider ourselves carefully, we should realize that we are the masterpiece of all God’s masterpieces. God created the whole universe, and of all the creatures of this world, He chose you and me, the born-again, and made us His own children, so that we may rule over the universe. Having been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have now been created as God’s children by God Himself.

It is absolutely not true that we appeared on the planet earth by accident through mutation, as claimed by the theory of evolution, which is nothing more than a man-made hypothesis. The fact that we are living in harmony with all other creatures, and that we were born as God’s children who inherited the right to rule over them, can never be described as a mere



coincidence. This is something that was achieved according to God's plan established at the very beginning. God created us, and according to His image, He made us sinless and holy.

It is not through our own effort and change that we become God's children, but it is according to how God had already planned in His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ, that we are turned into the born-again righteous, reigning and ruling over everything in the world. This is God's doing, not ours. God Himself created us through Jesus Christ. None other than this is what is meant by the fact that God created us according to His image.

God wanted to create us as His children, and it is according to this will that He created us on the last day. With what kind of plan did God intend while creating us humans? God did not create the universe and everything in it without any plan. Everything in the universe was created by God to

give to His children. God created human beings according to His own image to accept them as His children. This is the purpose for which God created mankind. Even though human beings are no more than mere creatures, God created them sinless, and thereby turned them into His own children with real sovereign power. So, considering this, we the born-again may be described as the greatest masterpiece of all God's creation.

Can a human being create another human being? Of course not. As creatures, we belong to God's creation, but because we are actually God's sons and daughters, we are not just in the universe, but we are standing over it. So we need to realize what an amazing and great grace it is that out of all His creatures, God chose us to be created as His children.

How were we made? God said, "*Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness,*"





and God was pleased to have created mankind. It is God who created us.

As what kind of beings did God create us? He made us as His children. Since God Himself says that He created human beings His own children, does this then mean you are also Gods' children? Of course! You are not just ordinary human beings, but you are God's children. People routinely say that mankind is the "master of all creation," but in fact, we are God's children who have come to partake in His divine attributes.

"Can mere creatures dare to be placed in the same position as the Creator?" Some may question the likeness of this. No, this does not mean that we, mere creatures, should be so arrogant and presumptuous that we would covet God's place. Rather, we have become God's children because God had already created us so by creating mankind according to His image from the very beginning, and because we believe

in this. This was made possible all because the Almighty God had already created us as His children as part of the foundation of the world through Jesus Christ, and because He has given the same authority and glory as His to those who know this and believe in it. God made us according to His image.

## **We Are to Be the Praise of God's Glory**

God's work is truly amazing. If we realize the fact that God created us according to His image, we can also realize why Satan is trying to challenge God on this earth and cover His glory. And we can also grasp the reason why we must give thanks to God everyday and praise Him wholeheartedly.



The purpose for which God created us is explained in Ephesians 1:12: *“That we who first trusted in Christ should be to the praise of His glory.”* Herein lies the very purpose for which God created us—*“that we... should be to the praise of His glory.”*

What, then, does it mean that God created us so that we “should be to the praise of His glory”? It means that God allowed us, who are no more than creatures, to put on the image of the Son of God. This is none other than God’s glory. In other words, God has clothed us with His own glory. It is because God has clothed us with His glory that we are praising Him, to return this glory back to God again. It is to thank God for the grace that has allowed us to put on His glory that we give praise to God.

The purpose of His creation is *“That we who first trusted in Christ should be to the praise of His glory.”* On the sixth day of God’s creation of

the heavens and the earth, He made us according to His image and likeness. Since God turned us, mere creatures, into His own children, this means that God has clothed us in boundless glory. None other than you and I have put on this glory of God. It is you and I, who know that God created us according to His image just like Himself, for His glory and by His love and grace, that have put on the glory of God and should be to His praise.

God created us by giving up Himself. That is how we have put on the glory of this grace, and we have become no less than God’s own children partaking in His divine attributes (2 Peter 1:4) no longer being mere creatures. It’s because God has thus clothed us with His splendor and glory that Ephesians 1:12 says we *“should be to the praise of His glory.”* We need to realize just how glorious and splendid we have become, now that



we have received the remission of our sins from God.

A psalmist says, “*A man who is in honor, yet does not understand, Is like the beasts that perish*” (Psalm 49:20). Why is this the case? It is not to live in vain that God sent us to be born from the womb of our mothers and carry on with our lives in this world.

Yet despite this, people do not realize their original selves, constantly mourning about how wretched their lives are. They complain bitterly, lamenting, “My life is worse than a beast! Why was I born on this earth?” However, our God absolutely did not make us so that we would live like this, born in vain only to return to a handful of dust without any purpose.

By clothing us with His glory, God has made us His own sons and daughters. God made us in His own image and clothed us in His glory, so that we would praise the glory of God the Father

forever. This is why God made us. God created us and allowed for us be born on this earth so that we should praise God for His Sovereignty and glory all over the universe that He created.

How amazing it is! We knew nothing, and we were no more than mere creatures, helpless and powerless. Yet now that we are in the Lord, how have we changed? We have put on glory in the Lord, we are now living in Him, and we have been made to be the praise of the glory of God. God has called us to glorify Him. Of the countless creatures that God created, God is so rejoiced to see us the born-again, and we can only thank God for His grace and praise Him.

Our glory is such that even angels desire it. Even angels wish for the grace of God bestowed on us, wondering, “How have human beings become God’s children? How do they conform to the image of God?” At first, God made us



slightly lower than angels, but His plan was to recreate us according to His image and likeness.

When we begin worship service, we always sing hymns praising God. Our praise is different from the ritualistic praise given by the religionists of the world. With our lips we praise God for clothing us in glory, and for bestowing us with His love and grace through His glorious light. To praise God, who is our glory, and to praise Him for clothing us with this glory of His, we part our lips and exalt Him for everything He has done. This is what praise is all about. This is the proper praise that we give to Him. It is our hearts that praise God out loud. It is with our hearts, coming together into a single heart, that we praise our God for what He has done for us.

Therefore, when we praise, we shouldn't just sing thoughtlessly. We should remember what kind of glory our God has bestowed upon us. We must remember that God has made us His

children, clothed us with glory and splendor, and provided for us to dwell in everlasting life. When we praise, it should be in remembrance of the glory that God has clothed us.

## **God Has Redeemed Us from All Our Sins**

What God did on the sixth day is so amazing! After creating the heavens and the earth and everything in this world, God did something truly marvelous, and we cannot help but praise Him for this work.

What amazing work did God for His people on the fifth day? My fellow believers, on the fifth day, God told us how we could live by faith, and He told us that He has made it possible for our faith to grow and for us to live by faith. What God did on the fifth day is so very amazing! God



has given us great faith, like wings, so that we may live by faith after being born again. God has made us the righteous to soar above the earth of this world and fly across the firmament of the heavens.

There is no way for those who are not born again to live by faith. They cannot survive once they leave this earth. In contrast, for us the born-again, though we are living on this earth, our earthly lives are not our real lives, but we live heavenly lives and do heavenly works by faith. In other words, it is not the earthly life that we the born-again righteous people live, but it is the heavenly life.

This means that those who have now been born again should no longer live for the things of the earth that would perish away, but live a spiritual life by faith with everlasting life in sight. God has made us the people of faith, so that by trusting in God, we would freely enjoy

the dominion of His Son and do His righteous work.

Ephesians 1:14 says, “*Who is the guarantee of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of His glory.*” God has redeemed His purchased possession! My fellow believers, through Jesus Christ, God has gained us as His children. God the Father created us according to His image. By redeeming us, God took us in as His own children.

In other words, once our God saved us, He began to reign over us completely. We can never escape from His hands of redemption. We can never depart from God’s glory. God leads the born-again, His people, and reigns over them wholly, so that He shall never again lose us to the Devil.

Ephesians 1:5-6 describes the purpose for which God created us. It is written, “*Having*



*predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He made us accepted in the Beloved.*” The reason why God created us as His sons and daughters is so that we are, “according to the good pleasure of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He made us accepted in the Beloved.”

God has created us as His children. By His grace God has remitted us from our sins. Through Jesus Christ God has washed away all our sins as white as snow. So that there may be no more sacrifice for sin, no more reason to receive the remission of sin again, God has saved us completely and perfectly. It is written, “*Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin*” (Hebrews 10:18). That Jesus Christ has saved us by His grace

means that Jesus Christ has made us His children.

“To the praise of the glory of His grace.” We praise our God for being such a God of love and mercy. He is such a God of grace that He has bestowed us with so much of His abundant grace, loved us so perfectly, clothed us with His grace so completely, and bestowed His own glory on us so flawlessly—and we praise Him for all this. It is by allowing us to praise God—His grace, His glory, and His love—that God has saved us, so that we may exalt Him high above. So when we raise our voices to praise God’s glory, God is so pleased to have made us and saved us.

It is you and I who are to reveal the glory of God on this earth. It is the born-again who are to proclaim God’s glory. Our God created mankind on the last day of creation, making a man and a woman, and our God blessed them. He gave them dominion over all creation, saying to them,



“Rule over everything on the earth.” When God created us, He did not create us merely as ordinary creatures like everything else. Fundamentally speaking, God made human beings as His divine sons and daughters in the likeness of His own image, thus clothing them in His glory. Tragically, however, countless people still remain oblivious to this, living in this world in vain only to perish away so wretchedly.

## What Is a Spiritual Life?

My fellow believers, have you lived a spiritual life? When we live a spiritual life, we can realize how God has glorified us. It is after being born again that we begin to live a spiritual life. What, then, is this spiritual life? It is to live by faith for God, for the gospel and the Truth, ruling over the things of the earth. Once you and I, the born-

again, have the belief that “God is making us live for His righteous work,” then from then on our hearts are strengthened, and from then on God entrusts us with His work so that we may do the work of righteousness and fulfill spiritual ministries. In other words, God has entrusted us with spiritual, righteous ministries. As we do the Lord’s work and live our lives for the Lord, it is through this that the glory of God’s grace is manifested, and God Himself is glorified by us.

Our God is glorified when He hears our praise. And God is also glorified through the spreading of this gospel that we do, through the lives that we live, and through everything that we do. It is through our faith that God’s glory and authority are manifested, His power is revealed, and His divinity is proclaimed.

Satan is the fallen angel whose arrogance led him to his downfall. Challenging God, the Devil said, *“I will ascend above the heights of the*



*clouds, I will be like the Most High” (Isaiah 14:14).* However, God drove out this angel from His Kingdom, cast out the other angels that followed him as well, and then created mankind in the likeness of His image. That’s why even angels, seeing human beings made according to the image of God, envied them. That’s because God glorified human beings to become His own children. Although angels wish they could also put on such a glory, God made them suffice as His servants, while He made mankind His children. That is why the Bible says, *“In Him also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestined according to the purpose of Him who works all things according to the counsel of His will” (Ephesians 1:11).*

God created us according to His desire. He created us according to His will. So no creature can object to God. God took a rib of Man, and created Woman out of it. God created us to be

born again by giving a part of His body to us. Without expecting anything in return, God created human beings according to His image, freely giving a part of His body and even breathing His life into them, and God took them as His children. Even the parents of the flesh give a part of themselves to their children when conceiving them; likewise, God bestowed His glory on human beings and gave them life, so that they may live God’s spiritual life forever. In other words, by giving His life to mankind and thus sanctifying it, God has created us to be holy like Himself. None other than this is the very glory of God.

*“Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished” (Genesis 2:1).* What marvelous things our God is telling us in Genesis! By creating you and I to be born again, God completed everything He sought to do.





That's why God rested after creating mankind be born again. And He created the born-again to live forever in the Garden of Eden. Moreover, God also allowed His children to rule over everything in the whole wide world. Therefore, it is you and I who are to reign over all the dominion of God as His children.

My fellow believers, are our lives ruled by anyone else? No, even as we live on this earth, we are not ruled by the world. Are you then barely getting by in this world? No, we are not such people. Do you realize just who we are? Apart from God, there is no one else who can rule over us. At your work, you probably feel as if you are pushed around by your boss, right? But does your boss actually command even your hearts? No, of course not! There is no one but God who has dominion over our hearts.

We are God's people ruled by no other human being. Our king is God Himself. We are His

children, and as His children, we live to rule over this world.

## **We Praise God's Glory**

My fellow believers, our God has made it possible for us to live spiritually. God has enabled us to live by faith, He has bestowed us with the abundant riches of His righteousness, He has nurtured our faith to grow, and He has blessed us all. From the very first day, our God divided the light from darkness, His people from the rest, and those who stand on His side from those who do not.

Once we are born again, and once we realize why God loves us and why He has saved us through Jesus Christ out of all His creatures, we come to now stand on God's side. Those who thus stand on God's side by accepting His Word



and glory come to put on the glory of God. That is God's justice. However, while some people become God's children by believing in Jesus Christ, still others reject the majestic glory of Jesus Christ and His grace. Such people are standing on Satan's side, and as such, God cannot clothe them with His glory.

The glory of God has already filled in abundance the entire universe, this firmament, and us. God has made us righteous with His justice. That God made us according to His image and likeness is the greatest glory of all that God has bestowed upon in Jesus Christ.

However, countless people still believe in the words of the prince of the power of the air, Satan the Devil, and deceived by his words, they are unable to put on the glory of God. We see countless people living accursed lives on this earth, standing against God.

Let us now recapitulate God's message and reach our conclusion. How is it possible that we are now able to live before God as the masters of this earth and the Kingdom of Heaven? How did we put on the grace of God that we have now come to proclaim the Kingdom of God and the glory of our Lord far and wide? All that we can do is just give thanks to God for allowing us to live in such tremendous blessings, for glorifying us to become God's own children, and for creating us to live spiritual lives.

You and I are kings of the Kingdom of Heaven. God has bestowed us with such a grace. God has clothed us with His boundless love. God has given us such an honor to become His own children. By creating us to be His children through His grace, God has enabled us to partake in His divine attributes, and He has created us to be holy beings like Himself. We should forever praise God for this, thank Him, spread His



righteousness, and live our spiritual lives for this righteousness.

God did not place the righteous on this earth just to live in vain. It is to allow us to praise His glory that God has saved us. Jesus Christ has saved us, God has made us His children, and although we are living among creatures, God is telling us that we are not just creatures, but His children and kings of the Kingdom of Heaven.

That we are now kings, that the love of God is boundless, and that God has bestowed this grace on us—we should testify all these wonders, praising God for His grace, His love, and His blessings. To our God who has clothed us in His grace, I give all glory! For making us such children of God, I give all my thanks to Him and glorify Him!

We are now enjoying everything that God has given us in our lives. As God's children, we will enjoy what the Father has given us; as His

people, we will testify the Lord as our King far afield; as His servants, we will serve the Lord who is our Master; and as kings of His Kingdom, we will reign over all things—this is how we will live the rest of our lives. We will live our daily lives with our hearts filled with blessings, and when we go to the Kingdom of our Lord, we will live with Him forever, enjoying all His splendor, glory, blessings, and grace. ☒





*The New Life Mission*

*e-Books*

# USER GUIDE



How to Read

Easier Way to Read

Cover Page

# HOW TO READ

## PAGING THROUGH THE BOOK

### **Page by Page**

### **Skipping to a Page**



# PAGE BY PAGE



- **KeyBoard**

- 1) Page Up / Page Down Key

- Page Up = Previous Page,      Page Down = Next Page

- 2) Arrow Key

- ← or ↑ = Previous Page,      → or ↓ = Next Page

- **Acrobat Reader Menu Button**

- ◀ = Previous Page,      ▶ = Next Page

- **Link**

- ◀ = Previous Page,      ▶ = Next Page  
Contents = Go to Table of Contents



# SKIPPING TO A PAGE



## 1) Key Board

Ctrl + N Key : The number of page you want to go to.

## 2) Acrobat Reader Scroll Bar

Click and drag in the scroll bar until the page number in the number field matches the page you want to go to.



# EASIER WAY TO READ

## Using Bookmarks

You can move easily where you want by using bookmarks

- Show bookmarks : Press F5 Key on your keyboard
- Hide bookmarks : Press F5 Key again

